This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

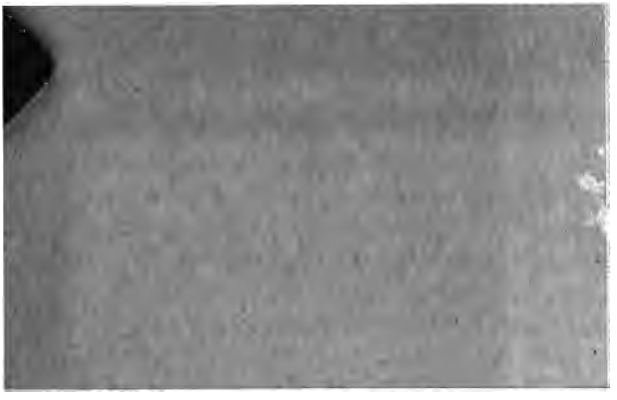
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

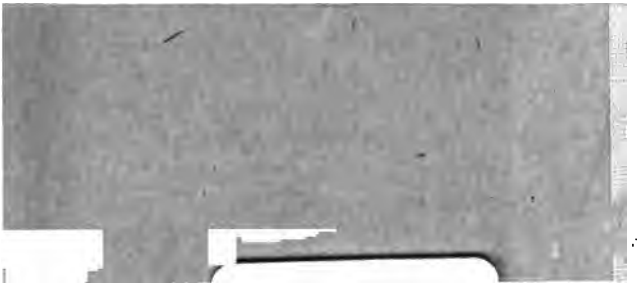
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 07609581 3

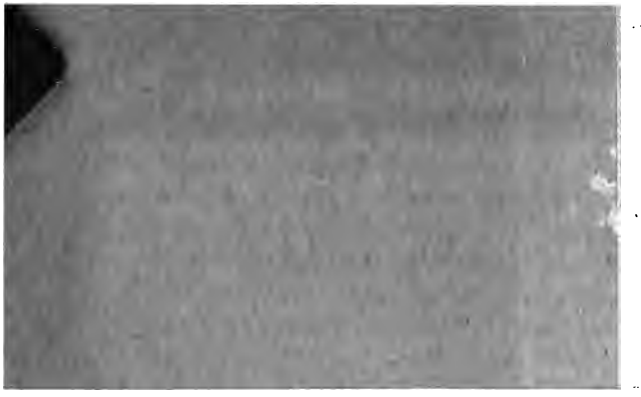


Cleveland Hoadley Dodge.

12/25-'20

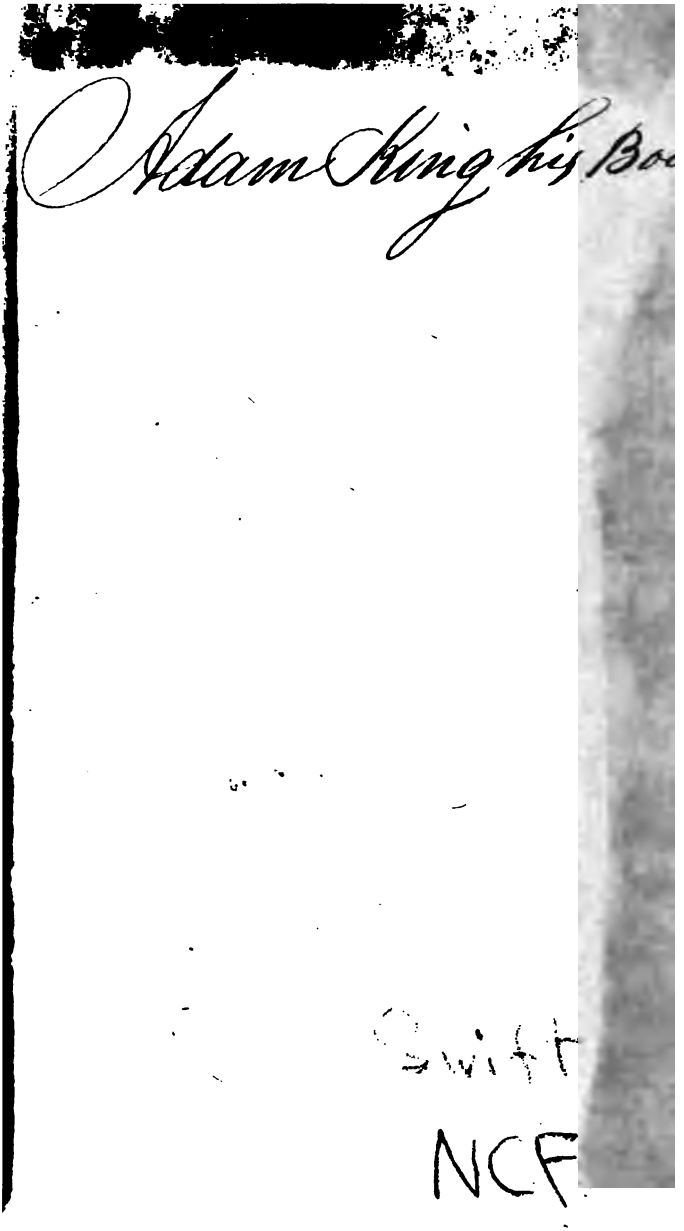


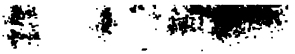
SWIFT

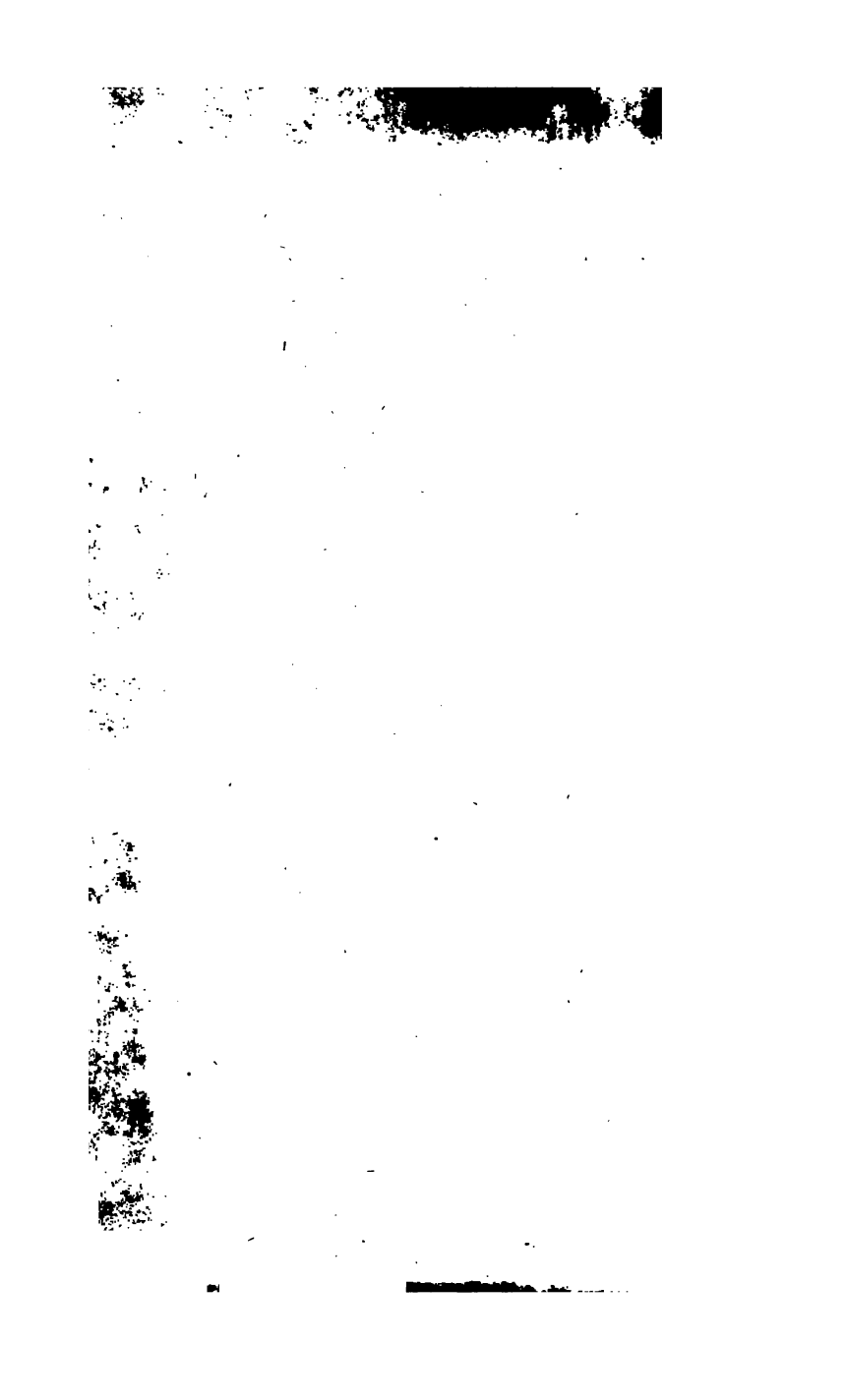


Cleveland Hoadley Dodge.

1-20 1/25-'20


Adam King his Bo
Swift
NCF





DR SWIFT'S WORKS,

COMPLETE

IN EIGHTEEN VOLUMES.

VOL. V.

THE

WORKS

OF

JONATHAN SWIFT, D.D.

DEAN OF ST PATRICK'S, DUBLIN:

INCLUDING THE WHOLE OF HIS

POSTHUMOUS PIECES, LETTERS, &c.

A NEW EDITION,

ACCURATELY REVISED, AND ARRANGED IN THE MOST NATURAL AND PROPER ORDER;

WITH

An Account of the AUTHOR'S LIFE,

AND

NOTES HISTORICAL, CRITICAL, AND EXPLANATORY,

By J. HAWKESWORTH, LL.D. and others.

ADORNED WITH COPPERPLATES.

VOL. V.

LONDON:

Printed for CHARLES ELLIOT, Edinburgh.

MDCCLXXXIV.

TO NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
110804A
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R 1924 L

TRAVELS

INTO SEVERAL

REMOTE NATIONS OF THE WORLD.

By LEMUEL GULLIVER,

First a Surgeon, and then a Captain of ſeveral ſhips.

IN FOUR PARTS.

THE CONTENTS.

Page

THE publiſher to the reader - - 1
Gulliver's letter to his couſin Sympſon - 3.

PART I.

A VOYAGE to LILLIPUT.

CHAP. I. *The Author gives ſome account of himſelf and family. His firſt inducements to travel. He is ſhipwrecked, and ſwims for his life; gets ſafe on ſhore in the country of Lilliput; is made a priſoner, and carried up the country* - - - - 10

CHAP. II. *The Emperor of Lilliput, attended by ſeveral of the nobility, comes to ſee the author in his confinement. The Emperor's perſon and habit deſcribed. Learned men appointed to teach the author their language. He gains favour by his mild diſpoſition. His pockets are ſearched, and his ſword and piſtols taken from him* - - - - 27

CHAP. III. *The Author diverts the Emperor, and his nobility of both ſexes, in a very uncommon manner. The diverſions of the court of*

Page

Lilliput described. The author has his liberty granted him, upon certain conditions - 41

CHAP. IV. *Mildendo, the metropolis of Lilliput, described, together with the Emperor's palace. A conversation between the author and a principal secretary, concerning the affairs of that empire. The author's offers to serve the Emperor in his wars* - -

CHAP. V. *The author, by an extraordinary stratagem, prevents an invasion. A big title of honour is conferred upon him. Ambassadors arrive from the Emperor of Blefuscu, and sue for peace. The Empress's apartment on fire by an accident; the author instrumental in saving the rest of the palace* - - 60

CHAP. VI. *Of the inhabitants of Lilliput; their learning, laws, and customs, the manner of educating their children. The author's way of living in that country. His vindication of a great lady* - - - - - - 70

CHAP. VII. *The author, being informed of a design to accuse him of high-treason, maketh his escape to Belfuscu. His reception there* 85

CHAP. VIII. *The author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuscu; and, after some difficulties, returns safe to his native country* - - - - - 9

PART

Page

PART II.

A VOYAGE to BROBDINGNAG.

CHAP. I. *A great ſtorm deſcribed, the long-boat ſent to fetch water, the author goes with it to diſcover the country. He is left on ſhore, is ſeized by one of the natives, and carried to a farmer's houſe. His reception, with ſeveral accidents that happened there. A deſcription of the inhabitants* - 106

CHAP. II. *A deſcription of the farmer's daughter. The author carried to a market-town, and then to the metropolis. The particulars of his journey* - - 124

CHAP. III. *The author ſent for to court. The Queen buys him of his maſter the farmer, and preſents him to the King. He diſputes with his Majeſty's great ſcholars. An apartment at court provided for the author. He is in high favour with the Queen. He ſtands up for the honour of his own country. His quarrels with the Queen's dwarf* - 132

CHAP. IV. *The country deſcribed. A propoſal for correcting modern maps. The King's palace, and ſome account of the metropolis. The author's way of travelling. The chief temple deſcribed* - - 147

CHAP. V. *Several adventures that happened to the author. The execution of a criminal. The author ſhews his ſkill in navigation* 154

CHAP. VI. *Several contrivances of the author to pleaſe the King and Queen. He ſhews*

P

his ſkill in muſic. The King enquires into the ſtate of England, which the author relates to him. The King's obſervations thereon - 1(

CHAP. VII. *The author's love of his country. He makes a propoſal of much advantage to the King, which is rejected. The King's great ignorance in politics. The learning of that country very imperfect and confined. The laws, and military affairs, and parties in the ſtate* - - - 1

CHAP. VIII. *The King and Queen make a progreſs to the frontiers. The author attends them. The manner in which he leaves the country very particularly related. He returns to England* - - . 1

PART III.

A VOYAGE to LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGNAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIB, and JAPAN.

CHAP. I. *The author ſets out on his third voyage, is taken by the pirates. The malice of a Dutchman. His arrival at an iſland. He is received into Laputa* - 2

CHAP. II. *The humours and diſpoſitions of the* Laputians *deſcribed. An account of their learning. Of the King, and his court. The author's reception there. The inhabitants ſubject to fear and diſquietudes. An account of the women* - - 2

CHAP. III. *A phænomenon ſolved by modern philoſophy and aſtronomy. The* Laputians

Page

great improvements in the latter. The King's method of suppressing insurrections - 231

CHAP. IV. *The author leaves* Laputa, *is conveyed to* Balnibarbi, *arrives at the metropolis. A description of the metropolis, and the country adjoining. The author hospitably received by a great lord. His conversation with that lord* - - - 238

CHAP. V. *The author permitted to see the grand academy of* Lagado. *The academy largely described. The arts wherein the professors employ themselves* - 247

CHAP. VI. *A further account of the academy. The author proposes some improvements, which are honourably received* - 259

CHAP. VII. *The author leaves* Lagado, *arrives at* Maldonada. *No ship ready. He takes a short voyage to* Glubbdubdrib. *His reception by the governor* - - 267

CHAP. VIII. *A further account of* Glubbdubdrib. *Ancient and modern history corrected* 279

CHAP. IX. *The author returns to* Maldonada. *Sails to the kingdom of* Luggnagg. *The author confined. He is sent for to court. The manner of his admittance. The King's great lenity to his subjects* - - 293

CHAP. X. *The* Luggnaggians *commended. A particular description of the* Struldbrugs, *with many conversations between the author and some eminent persons upon that subject* 299

CHAP. XI. *The author leaves* Luggnagg,

and ſails to Japan. *From thence he returns in a* Dutch *ſhip to* Amſterdam, *and from* Amſterdam *to* England - - 1

PART IV.

A VOYAGE to the country of the HOUYHNHN

CHAP. I. *The author ſets out as captain of a ſhip. His men conſpire againſt him, confine him a long time to his cabbin, ſet him on ſhore in an unknown land. He travels up into the country. The* Yahoos, *a ſtrange ſort of animal, deſcribed. The author meets two* Houyhnhnms - - 3

CHAP. II. *The author conducted by a* Houyhnhnm *to his houſe. The houſe deſcribed. The author's reception. The food of the* Houyhnhnms. *The author, in diſtreſs for want of meat, is at laſt relieved. His manner of feeding in this country* - 5

CHAP. III. *The author ſtudious to learn the language; the* Houyhnhnm, *his maſter, aſſiſts in teaching him. The language deſcribed. Several* Houyhnhnms *of quality come out of curioſity to ſee the author. He gives his maſter a ſhort account of his voyage* - 8

CHAP. IV. *The* Houyhnhnms *notion of truth and falſehood. The author's diſcourſe diſapproved by his maſter. The author gives a more particular account of himſelf, and the accidents of his voyage* - - 13

Page

CHAP. V. *The author, at his maſter's command, informs him of the ſtate of England. The cauſes of war among the princes of Europe. The author begins to explain the Engliſh conſtitution* - - - 358

CHAP. VI. *A continuation of the ſtate of England under Queen Anne. The character of a firſt miniſter of ſtate in European courts* 368

CHAP. VII. *The author's great love of his native country. His maſter's obſervations upon the conſtitution and adminiſtration of England, as deſcribed by the author, with parallel caſes and compariſons. His maſter's obſervations upon human nature* - 378

CHAP. VIII. *The author relates ſeveral particulars of the* Yahoos. *The great virtues of the* Houyhnhnms. *The education and exerciſe of their youth. Their general aſſembly* - - - - 389

CHAP. IX. *A grand debate at the general aſſembly of the* Houyhnhnms, *and how it was determined. The learning of the* Houyhnhnms. *Their buildings. Their manner of burials. The defectiveneſs of their language.* - - - - 398

CHAP. X. *The author's œconomy, and happy life, among the* Houyhnhnms. *His great improvement in virtue, by converſing with them. Their converſations. The author hath notice given him by his maſter, that he muſt depart from the country. He falls*

into a ſwoon for grief; but ſubmits. He co.
trives and finiſhes a canoe by the help of a fe
low-ſervant, and puts to ſea at a venture

CHAP. XI. *The author's dangerous voyag*
He arrives at New-Holland, hoping to ſett
there. Is wounded with an arrow from one
the natives. Is ſeized and carried by for
into a Portugueze ſhip. The great civilit
of the captain. The author arrives at Engla

CHAP. XII. *The author's veracity. His a*
ſign in publiſhing this work. His cenſure
thoſe travellers who ſwerve from the trut
The author clears himſelf from any ſiniſt
ends in writing. An objection anſwere
The method of planting colonies. His nati
country commended. The right of the cro
to thoſe countries deſcribed by the author,
juſtified. The difficulty of conquering the
The author takes his laſt leave of the reade
propoſeth his manner of living for the futur
gives good advice, and concludeth -

THREE POEMS.

To Quinbus Fleſtrin, the Man-Mountain :
Lilliputian Ode - - -

The Lamentation of Glumdalclitch, for the loſs
Grildrig : A Paſtoral - -

Mary Gulliver to Capt. Lemuel Gulliver -

The PUBLISHER to the READER.

THE author of theſe travels, Mr Lemuel Gulliver, is my ancient and intimate friend; there is likewiſe ſome relation between us on the mother's ſide. About three years ago, Mr Gulliver, growing weary of the concourſe of curious people coming to him at his houſe in Redriff, made a ſmall purchaſe of and with a convenient houſe near Newark in Nottinghamſhire, his native country; where he now lives retired, yet in good eſteem among his neighbours.

Although Mr Gulliver was born in Nottinghamſhire, where his father dwelt, yet I have heard him ſay, his family came from Oxfordſhire; to confirm which, I have obſerved in the church-yard at Banbury, in that county, ſeveral tombs and monuments of the Gullivers.

Before he quitted Redriff, he left the cuſtody of the following papers in my hands, with the liberty to diſpoſe of them as I ſhould think fit. I have carefully peruſed them three times: The ſtyle is very plain and ſimple; and the only fault I find is, that the author, after the manner of travellers, is a little too circumſtantial. There is an air of truth apparent through the whole; and indeed the author was ſo diſtinguiſhed for his veracity, that it became a ſort of a proverb among his neighbours at Redriff, when any one

affirmed a thing, to ſay it was as true as if Mr Gulliver had ſpoken it.

By the advice of ſeveral worthy perſons, to whom, with the author's permiſſion, I communicated theſe papers, I now venture to ſend them into the world, hoping they may be, at leaſt for ſome time, a better entertainment to our young noblemen, than the common ſcribbles of politics and party.

This volume would have been at leaſt twice as large, if I had not made bold to ſtrike out innumerable paſſages relating to the winds and tides, as well as to the variations and bearings in the ſeveral voyages, together with the minute deſcriptions of the management of the ſhip in ſtorms in the ſtyle of ſailors; likewiſe the account of longitudes and latitudes; wherein I have reaſon to apprehend, that Mr Gulliver may be a little diſſatisfied: But I was reſolved to fit the work, as much as poſſible, to the general capacity of readers. However, if my own ignorance in ſea affairs ſhall have led me to commit ſome miſtakes, I alone am anſwerable for them: And if any traveller hath a curioſity to ſee the whole work at large, as it came from the hand of the author, I will be ready to gratify him.

As for any further particulars relating to the author, the reader will receive ſatisfaction from the firſt pages of the book.

RICHARD SYMPSON.

LETTER from Capt. GULLIVER, to his couſin SYMPSON.

Written in the year 1727.

HOPE you will be ready to own publicly, whenever you ſhall be called to it, that by great and frequent urgency, you prevailed me to publiſh a very looſe and uncorrect unt of my travels, with direction to hire young gentleman of either univerſity to hem in order, and correct the ſtyle, as my in Dampier did by my advice in his book d, *A voyage round the world.* But I do not mber I gave you power to conſent, that any g ſhould be omitted, and much leſs that any g ſhould be inſerted: Therefore, as to the r, I do here renounce every thing of that ; particularly a paragraph about her Majeſty en Anne, of moſt pious and glorious me- y; although I did reverence and eſteem her e than any of the human ſpecies. But you, our interpolator, ought to have conſidered, as it was not my inclination, ſo was it not nt to praiſe any animal of our compoſition re my maſter Houyhnhnm; and beſides, the was altogether falſe; for to my knowledge, g in England during ſome part of her eſty's reign, ſhe did govern by a chief mi- r; nay, even by two ſucceſſively, the firſt

whereof was the lord of Godolphin, and the ſecond the lord of Oxford; ſo that you have made me *ſay the thing that was not.* Likewiſe, in the account of the academy of projectors, and ſeveral paſſages of my diſcourſe to my maſter Houyhnhnm, you have either omitted ſome material circumſtances, or minced or changed them in ſuch a manner, that I do hardly know mine own work. When I formerly hinted to you ſomething of this in a letter, you were pleaſed to anſwer, that you were afraid of giving offence; that people in power were very watchful over the preſs, and apt not only to interpret, but to puniſh every thing which looked like an innuendo (as I think you call it.) But, pray how could that which I ſpoke ſo many years ago, and at above five thouſand leagues diſtance, in another reign, be applied to any of the Yahoos, who now are ſaid to govern the herd; eſpecially at a time when I little thought on, or feared, the unhappineſs of living under them? Have not I the moſt reaſon to complain, when I ſee theſe very Yahoos carried by Houyhnhnms in a vehicle, as if theſe were brutes, and thoſe the rational creatures? And indeed to avoid ſo monſtrous and deteſtable a ſight, was one principal motive of my retirement hither.

Thus much I thought proper to tell you, in relation to yourſelf, and to the truſt I repoſed in you.

I do in the next place complain of my own great want of judgment, in being prevailed upon,

by

by the intreaties and falſe reaſonings of you and and ſome others, very much againſt my own opinion, to ſuffer my travels to be publiſhed. Pray bring to your mind how often I deſired you to conſider, when you inſiſted on the motive of *public good*, that the Yahoos were a ſpecies of animals utterly incapable of amendment by precepts or example: And ſo it hath proved; for, inſtead of ſeeing a full ſtop put to all abuſes and corruptions, at leaſt in this little iſland, as I had reaſon to expect; behold, after above ſix months warning, I cannot learn that my book has produced one ſingle effect according to mine intentions. I deſired you would let me know, by a letter, when party and faction were extinguiſhed; judges learned and upright; pleaders honeſt and modeſt with ſome tincture of common ſenſe, and Smithfield blazing with pyramids of law-books; the young nobility's education entirely changed; the phyſicians baniſhed; the female Yahoos abounding in virtue, honour, truth, and good ſenſe; courts and levees of great miniſters thoroughly weeded and ſwept; wit, merit, and learning rewarded; all diſgracers of the preſs in proſe and verſe condemned to eat nothing but their own cotton, and quench their thirſt with their own ink. Theſe, and a thouſand other reformations, I firmly counted upon by your encouragement; as indeed they were plainly deducible from the precepts delivered in my book. And it muſt be owned, that ſeven months were a ſufficient time to correct every vice and folly to

which Yahoos are ſubject, if their natures had been capable of the leaſt diſpoſition to virtue or wiſdom: Yet, ſo far have you been from anſwering mine expectation in any of your letters; that on the contrary you are loading our carrier every week with libels, and keys, and reflections, and memoirs, and ſecond parts; wherein I ſee myſelf accuſed of reflecting upon great ſtatesfolk; of degrading human nature (for ſo they have ſtill the confidence to ſtile it) and of abuſing the female ſex. I find likewiſe, that the writers of thoſe bundles are not agreed among themſelves; for ſome of them will not allow me to be the author of mine own travels; and others make me the author of books, to which I am wholly a ſtranger.

I find likewiſe, that your printer hath been ſo careleſs as to confound the times, and miſtake the dates of my ſeveral voyages and returns; neither aſſigning the true year, nor the true month, nor day of the month: And I hear the original manuſcript is all deſtroyed ſince the publication of my book; neither have I any copy left; however, I have ſent you ſome corrections, which you may inſert, if ever there ſhould be a ſecond edition: And yet I cannot ſtand to them; but ſhall leave that matter to my judicious and candid readers, to adjuſt it as they pleaſe.

I hear ſome of our ſea Yahoos find fault with my ſea-language, as not proper in many parts, nor now in uſe. I cannot help it. In my firſt voyages, while I was young, I was inſtructed by the

the oldeſt mariners, and learned to ſpeak as they did. But I have ſince found, that the ſea Yahoos are apt, like the land ones, to become new-fangled in their words, which the latter change every year; inſomuch, as I remember upon each return to mine own country, their old dialect was ſo altered, that I could hardly underſtand the new. And I obſerve, when any Yahoo comes from London, out of curioſity to viſit me at mine own houſe, we neither of us are able to deliver our conceptions in a manner intelligible to the other.

If the cenſure of the Yahoos could any way affect me, I ſhould have great reaſon to complain, that ſome of them are ſo bold as to think my book of travels a mere fiction out of mine own brain; and have gone ſo far as to drop hints, that the Houyhnhnms and Yahoos have no more exiſtence than the inhabitants of Utopia.

Indeed I muſt confeſs, that as to the people of Lilliput, Brobdingrag (for ſo the word ſhould have been ſpelt, and not erroneouſly Brobdingnag) and Laputa, I have never yet heard of any Yahoo ſo preſumptuous as to diſpute their being, or the facts I have related concerning them; becauſe the truth immediately ſtrikes every reader with conviction. And is there leſs probability in my account of the Houyhnhnms or Yahoos, when it is manifeſt as to the latter, there are ſo many thouſands, even in this city, who only differ from their brother brutes in Houyhnhnm-land, becauſe they uſe a ſort of Jabber, and do not go naked? I

wrote

wrote for their amendment, and not their approbation. The united praiſe of the whole race would be of leſs conſequence to me, than the neighing of thoſe two degenerate Houyhnhnms I keep in my ſtable; becauſe from theſe, degenerate as they are, I ſtill improve in ſome virtues without any mixture of vice.

Do theſe miſerable animals preſume to think, that I am ſo degenerated as to defend my veracity? Yahoo as I am, it is well known through all Houyhnhnm-land, that, by the inſtructions and example of my illuſtrious maſter, I was able, in the compaſs of two years, (although I confeſs with the utmoſt difficulty) to remove that infernal habit of lying, ſhuffling, deceiving, and equivocating, ſo deeply rooted in the very ſouls of all my ſpecies; eſpecially the Europeans.

I have other complaints to make upon this vexatious occaſion; but I forbear troubling myſelf or you any further. I muſt freely confeſs, that, ſince my laſt return, ſome corruptions of my Yahoo nature have revived in me, by converſing with a few of your ſpecies, and particularly thoſe of mine own family, by an unavoidable neceſſity; elſe I ſhould never have attempted ſo abſurd a project, as that of reforming the Yahoo race in this kingdom: But I have now done with all ſuch viſionary ſchemes for ever.

April 27. 1727.

*** That

*** That the original copy of theſe travels was altered by the perſon, through whoſe hands it was conveyed to the preſs, is a fact; but the paſſages, of which Mr Gulliver complains in this letter, are to be found only in the firſt editions; for the Dean having reſtored the text where-ever it had been altered, ſent the copy to the late Mr Motte by the hands of Mr Charles Ford. This copy has been exactly followed in every ſubſequent edition, except that printed in Ireland, by George Faulkner, the editor of which, ſuppoſing the Dean to be ſerious when he mentioned the corruption of dates, and yet finding them unaltered, thought fit to alter them himſelf. There is, however, ſcarce one of theſe alterations, in which he has not committed a blunder: Though, while he was thus buſy in defacing the parts that were perfect, he ſuffered the accidental blemiſhes of others to remain. *Hawkeſ.*—See the preface to this edition.

TRAVELS

TRAVELS

INTO SEVERAL

REMOTE NATIONS OF THE WORLD*.

PART I.

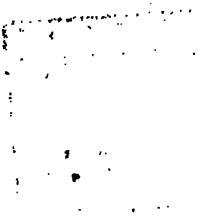
A VOYAGE TO LILLIPUT.

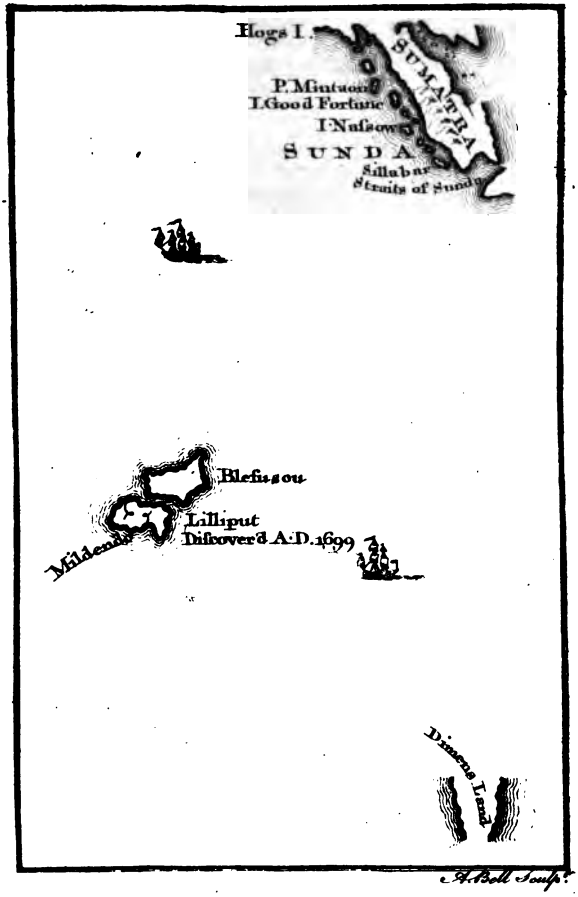
CHAP. I.

The author gives ſome account of himſelf and family: His firſt inducements to travel. He is ſhipwrecked, and ſwims for his life; gets ſafe on ſhore in the country of Lilliput; is made a priſoner, and carried up the country.

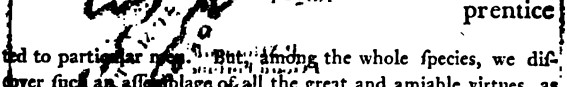
MY father had a ſmall eſtate in Nottinghamſhire: I was the third of five ſons. He ſent me to Emanuel college in Cambridge at fourteen years old, where I reſided three years, and applied myſelf cloſe to my

* Theſe voyages are intended as a moral political romance, in which Swift ſeems to have exerted the ſtrongeſt efforts of a fine irregular genius. But while his imagination and his wit delight, the venomous ſtrokes of his ſatire, although in ſome places juſt, are carried into ſo univerſal a ſeverity, that not only all human actions, but human nature itſelf, is placed in the worſt light.——Perfection in every attribute is not indeed allotted




Hogs I.
SUMATRA
P. Mintaon
I. Good Fortune
I. Nassow
SUNDA
Sillabar
Straits of Sunda
Blefuscou
Lilliput
Discover'd A.D. 1699
Mildendo
Diemens Land
A. Bell Sculp.

my ſtudies; but the charge of maintaining me, although I had a very ſcanty allowance, being too great for a narrow fortune, I was bound apprentice



ted to particular men. But among the whole ſpecies, we diſcover ſuch an aſſemblage of all the great and amiable virtues, as may convince me that the original order of nature contains in it the greateſt beauty. It is directed in a right line; but it deviates into curves and irregular motions, by various alterations and diſturbing cauſes. Different qualifications ſhine out in different men. BACON and NEWTON (not to mention BOYLE) ſhew the divine extent of the human mind: Of which Swift could not be inſenſible; but his diſappointments rendered him ſplenetic, and angry with the whole world.——Education, habit, and conſtitution, gave a ſurpriſing variety of characters; and, while they produce ſome particular qualities, are apt to check others. Fortitude of mind ſeldom attends a ſedentary life: Nor is the man, whoſe ambitious views are croſſed, ſcarce ever afterwards endued with benevolence of heart. The ſame mind that is capable of exerting the greateſt virtue, by ſome defect in the firſt ſteps of education, often degenerates into the greateſt vice. Theſe effects take their ſource from cauſes almoſt mechanical. The ſoul, in our preſent ſituation, is blended and incloſed with corporeal ſubſtance; and the matter, of which our body is compoſed, produces ſtrange impulſes upon the mind.—To correct vice, by ſhewing her deformity, in oppoſition to the beauty of virtue; and to amend the falſe ſyſtems of philoſophy, by pointing out the errors, and applying ſalutary means to avoid them; is a noble deſign, and was, I would fain flatter myſelf, the general intent of this hieroglyphic writer.—— Gulliver's travels are chiefly to be looked upon as an irregular eſſay of Swift's peculiar wit and humour. The inhabitants of Lilliput are repreſented, as if reflected from a concave mirror, by which every object is reduced to a deſpicable minuteneſs. The inhabitants of Brobdingnag, by a contrary mirror, are enlarged to a ſhocking deformity. In Lilliput we behold a ſet of puny inſects, or animalcules in human ſhape, ridiculouſly engaged in affairs of importance. In Brobdingnag the monſters of enormous ſize are employed

prentice to Mr James Bates, an eminent ſurgeon in London, with whom I continued four years; and my father now and then ſending me ſmall ſums of money, I laid them out in learning navigation, and other parts of the mathematics, uſeful to thoſe who intend to travel, as I always believed it would be ſome time or other my fortune to do. When I left Mr Bates, I went down to my father; where, by the aſſiſtance of him and my uncle John, and ſome other relations, I got forty pounds, and a promiſe of thirty pounds a-year to maintain me at Leyden: There I ſtudied phyſic two years and ſeven months, knowing it would be uſeful in long voyages.

Soon after my return from Leyden, I was recommended by my good maſter, Mr Bates, to be ſurgeon to the Swallow, Captain Abraham Pannell commander; with whom I continued three years and a half, making a voyage or two into the Levant, and ſome other parts. When I came back, I reſolved to ſettle in London; to which Mr Bates, my maſter, encouraged me, and by him I was recommended to ſeveral patients. I took part of a ſmall houſe in the Old-Jury; and, being adviſed to alter my condition, I married Mrs Mary Burton, ſecond daughter to Mr Edmund

employed in trifles —— In the two firſt parts there are many ridiculous adventures, even ſuch as muſt have excited mirth from Heraclitus. Where indelicacies do not intervene, the narrative is very entertaining and humorous. In ſome parts, Gulliver ſeems to have had particular incidents, if not particular perſons, in his view. His obſervations on education are uſeful: And ſo are his improvements on the inſtitutions of Lycurgus. *Orrery.*

mund Burton hoſier in Newgate-ſtreet, with whom I received four hundred pounds for a portion.

But, my good maſter Bates dying in two years after, and I having few friends, my buſineſs began to fail; for my conſcience would not ſuffer me to imitate the bad practice of too many among my brethren. Having therefore conſulted with my wife, and ſome of my acquaintance, I determined to go again to ſea. I was ſurgeon ſucceſſively in two ſhips, and made ſeveral voyages for ſix years to the Eaſt and Weſt-Indies, by which I got ſome addition to my fortune. My hours of leiſure I ſpent in reading the beſt authors, ancient and modern, being always provided with a good number of books; and, when I was aſhore, in obſerving the manners and diſpoſitions of the people, as well as learning their language, wherein I had a great facility by the ſtrength of my memory.

The laſt of theſe voyages not proving very fortunate, I grew weary of the ſea, and intended to ſtay at home with my wife and family. I removed from the Old-Jury to Fetter-lane, and from thence to Wapping, hoping to get buſineſs among the ſailors; but it would not turn to account. After three years expectation that things would mend, I accepted an advantageous offer from Capt. William Prichard, maſter of the Antelope, who was making a voyage to the South-Sea. We ſet ſail from Briſtol, May 4th, 1699; and our voyage at firſt was very proſperous.

It would not be proper, for ſome reaſons, to trouble the reader with the particulars of our adventures in thoſe ſeas. Let it ſuffice to inform him, that, in our paſſage from thence to the Eaſt-Indies, we were driven by a violent ſtorm to the north-weſt of Van Diemen's land. By an obſervation, we found ourſelves in the latitude of 30 degrees 2 minutes ſouth. Twelve of our crew were dead by immoderate labour, and ill food; the reſt were in a very weak condition. On the 5th of November, which was the beginning of ſummer in thoſe parts, the weather being very hazy, the ſeamen ſpied a rock within half a cable's length of the ſhip; but the wind was ſo ſtrong, that we were driven directly upon it, and immediately ſplit. Six of the crew, of whom I was one, having let down the boat into the ſea, made a ſhift to get clear of the ſhip and the rock. We rowed by my computation about three leagues, till we were able to work no longer, being already ſpent with labour while we were in the ſhip. We therefore truſted ourſelves to the mercy of the waves, and in about half an hour the boat was overſet by a ſudden flurry from the north. What became of my companions in the boat, as well as of thoſe who eſcaped on the rock, or were left in the veſſel, I cannot tell; but conclude they were all loſt. For my own part, I ſwam as fortune directed me, and was puſhed forward by wind and tide. I often let my legs drop, and could feel no bottom: But when I was almoſt gone, and able to ſtruggle no longer, I found

found myſelf within my depth; and by this time the ſtorm was much abated. The declivity was ſo ſmall, that I walked near a mile before I got to the ſhore, which I conjectured was about eight o'clock in the evening. I then advanced forward near half a mile, but could not diſcover any ſign of houſes or inhabitants; at leaſt I was in ſo weak a condition, that I did not obſerve them. I was extremely tired; and with that, and the heat of the weather, and about half a pint of brandy that I drank as I left the ſhip, I found myſelf much inclined to ſleep. I lay down on the graſs, which was very ſhort and ſoft, where I ſlept ſounder than ever I remembered to have done in my life, and, as I reckoned, about nine hours; for when I awaked, it was juſt day-light. I attempted to riſe, but was not able to ſtir; for, as I happened to lie on my back, I found my arms and legs were ſtrongly faſtened on each ſide to the ground; and my hair, which was long and thick, tied down in the ſame manner. I likewiſe felt ſeveral ſlender ligatures acroſs my body, from my arm-pits to my thighs. I could only look upwards, the ſun began to grow hot, and the light offended my eyes. I heard a confuſed noiſe about me; but, in the poſture I lay, could ſee nothing except the ſky. In a little time I felt ſomething alive moving on my left leg, which advancing gently forward over my breaſt, came almoſt up to my chin; when bending my eyes downward as much as I could, I perceived it to be a human creature not ſix inches high, with

a bow and arrow in his hands, and a quiver at his back. In the mean-time, I felt at leaſt forty more of the ſame kind (as I conjectured) following the firſt. I was in the utmoſt aſtoniſhment, and roared ſo loud, that they all ran back in a fright; and ſome of them, as I was afterwards told, were hurt with the falls they got by leaping from my ſides upon the ground. However, they ſoon returned; and one of them, who ventured ſo far as to get a full ſight of my face, lifting up his hands and eyes by way of admiration, cried out in a ſhrill but diſtinct voice, *Hekinah degul:* The others repeated the ſame words ſeveral times, but I then knew not what they meant. I lay all this while, as the reader may believe, in great uneaſineſs; at length, ſtruggling to get looſe, I had the fortune to break the ſtrings, and wrench out the pegs, that faſtened my left arm to the ground; for, by lifting it up to my face, I diſcovered the methods they had taken to bind me, and at the ſame time, with a violent pull, which gave me exceſſive pain, I a little looſened the ſtrings that tied down my hair on the left ſide, ſo that I was juſt able to turn my head about two inches. But the creatures ran off a ſecond time, before I could ſeize them; whereupon there was a great ſhout in a very ſhrill accent, and, after it ceaſed, I heard one of them cry aloud, *Tolgo phonac;* when in an inſtant I felt above an hundred arrows diſcharged on my left hand, which pricked me like ſo many needles; and beſides, they ſhot another flight into the air, as we do bombs

bombs in Europe, whereof many, I ſuppoſe, fell on my body, (though I felt them not) and ſome on my face, which I immediately covered with my left hand. When this ſhower of arrows was over me, I fell a groaning with grief and pain; and then ſtriving again to get looſe, they diſcharged another volley larger than the firſt, and ſome of them attempted with ſpears to ſtick me in the ſides; but by good luck I had on me a buff jerkin, which they could not pierce. I thought it the moſt prudent method to lie ſtill, and my deſign was to continue ſo till night, when, my left hand being already looſe, I could eaſily free myſelf: And as for the inhabitants, I had reaſon to believe I might be a match for the greateſt army they could bring againſt me, if they were all of the ſame ſize with him that I ſaw. But fortune diſpoſed otherwiſe of me. When the people obſerved I was quiet, they diſcharged no more arrows: But, by the noiſe I heard, I knew their numbers increaſed; and about four yards from me, over-againſt my right ear, I heard a knocking for above an hour, like that of people at work: When turning my head that way, as well as the pegs and ſtrings would permit me, I ſaw a ſtage erected about a foot and a half from the ground, capable of holding four of the inhabitants, with two or three ladders to mount it: From whence one of them, who ſeemed to be a perſon of quality, made me a long ſpeech, whereof I underſtood not one ſyllable. But I ſhould have mentioned, that before the

principal perſon began his oration, he cried out three times, *Langro dehul ſan;* (theſe words and the former were afterwards repeated and explained to me). Whereupon immediately about fifty of the inhabitants came and cut the ſtrings that faſtened the left ſide of my head, which gave me the liberty of turning it to the right, and of obſerving the perſon and geſture of him that was to ſpeak. He appeared to be of a middle age, and taller than any of the other three who attended him, whereof one was a page that held up his train, and ſeemed to be ſomewhat longer than my middle finger; the other two ſtood one on each ſide to ſupport him. He acted every part of an orator, and I could obſerve many periods of threatnings, and others of promiſes, pity, and kindneſs. I anſwered in a few words, but in the moſt ſubmiſſive manner, lifting up my left hand and both my eyes to the ſun, as calling him for a witneſs; and being almoſt famiſhed with hunger, having not eaten a morſel for ſome hours before I left the ſhip, I found the demands of nature ſo ſtrong upon me, that I could not forbear ſhewing my impatience (perhaps againſt the ſtrict rules of decency) by putting my finger frequently to my mouth, to ſignify that I wanted food. The *Hurgo* (for ſo they call a great lord, as I afterwards learned) underſtood me very well. He deſcended from the ſtage, and commanded that ſeveral ladders ſhould be applied to my ſides; on which above an hundred of the inhabitants mounted, and walked towards my mouth, laden with

a baſkets full of meat, which had been pro-
d and ſent thither by the King's orders, up-
he firſt intelligence he received of me. I ob-
ed there was the fleſh of ſeveral animals, but
ld not diſtinguiſh them by the taſte. There
e ſhoulders, legs, and loins, ſhaped like thoſe
mutton, and very well dreſſed, but ſmaller
a the wings of a lark. I eat them by two or
:e at a mouthful, and took three loaves at a
: about the bigneſs of muſket bullets. They
olied me as faſt as they could, ſhewing a thou-
l marks of wonder and aſtoniſhment at my
c and appetite. I then made another ſign,
: I wanted drink. They found by my eating,
: a ſmall quantity could not ſuffice me, and,
ig a moſt ingenious people, they ſlung up with
it dexterity one of their largeſt hogſheads,
a rolled it towards my hand, and beat out the
; I drank it off at a draught, which I might
l do, for it did not hold half a pint, and taſte
like a ſmall wine of Burgundy, but much
:e delicious. They brought me a ſecond
ſhead, which I drank in the ſame manner,
made ſigns for more; but they had none to
: me. When I had performed theſe wonders,
r ſhouted for joy, and danced upon my breaſt,
:ating ſeveral times, as they did at firſt, *Heki-*
degul. They made me a ſign that I ſhould
ow down the two hogſheads, but firſt warning
people below to ſtand out of the way, crying
ıd, *Borach mevola;* and when they ſaw the
ėls in the air, there was an univerſal ſhout of

Hekinah

Hekinah degul. I confeſs I was often tempted, while they were paſſing backwards and forwards on my body, to ſeize forty or fifty of the firſt that came in my reach, and daſh them againſt the ground. But the remembrance of what I had felt, which probably might not be the worſt they could do, and the promiſe of honour I made them, for ſo I interpreted my ſubmiſſive behaviour, ſoon drove out theſe imaginations. Beſides, I now conſidered myſelf as bound by the laws of hoſpitality to a people, who had treated me with ſo much expence and magnificence. However, in my thoughts I could not ſufficiently wonder at the intrepidity of theſe diminutive mortals, who durſt venture to mount and walk upon my body, while one of my hands was at liberty, without trembling at the very ſight of ſo prodigious a creature as I muſt appear to them. After ſome time, when they obſerved that I made no more demands for meat, there appeared before me a perſon of high rank from his Imperial Majeſty. His Excellency, having mounted on the ſmall of my right leg, advanced forwards to my face, with about a dozen of his retinue. And producing his credentials under the ſignet-royal, which he applied cloſe to my eyes, ſpoke about ten minutes without any ſigns of anger, but with a kind of determined reſolution; often pointing forwards, which, as I afterwards found, was towards the capital city, about half a mile diſtant, whither it was agreed by his Majeſty in council that I muſt be conveyed. I anſwered in few words,

words, but to no purpoſe, and made a ſign with my hand that was looſe, putting it to the other (but over his Excellency's head, for fear of hurting him or his train) and then to my head and body, to ſignify that I deſired my liberty. It appeared, that he underſtood me well enough; for he ſhook his head by way of diſapprobation, and held his hand in a poſture to ſhew that I muſt be carried as a priſoner. However, he made other ſigns, to let me underſtand that I ſhould have meat and drink enough, and very good treatment. Whereupon I once more thought of attempting to break my bonds; but again, when I felt the ſmart of their arrows upon my face and hands, which were all in bliſters, and many of the darts ſtill ſticking in them, and obſerving likewiſe that the number of my enemies increaſed, I gave tokens to let them know, that they might do with me what they pleaſed. Upon this the *Hurgo* and his train withdrew, with much civility, and chearful countenances. Soon after I heard a general ſhout, with frequent repetitions of the words, *Peblom ſelam*; and I felt great numbers of people on my left ſide, relaxing the cords to ſuch a degree, that I was able to turn upon my right, and to eaſe myſelf with making water; which I very plentifully did, to the great aſtoniſhment of the people, who conjecturing, by my motion, what I was going to do, immediately opened to the right and left on that ſide, to avoid the torrent, which fell with much noiſe and violence from me. But before this, they had daubed my

face

face and both my hands with a ſort of ointment very pleaſant to the ſmell, which in a few minutes removed all the ſmart of their arrows. Theſe circumſtances added to the refreſhment I had received by their victuals and drink, which were very nouriſhing, diſpoſed me to ſleep. I ſlept about eight hours, as I was afterwards aſſured; and it was no wonder, for the phyſicians, by the Emperor's order, had mingled a ſleepy potion in the hogſheads of wine.

It ſeems, that upon the firſt moment I was diſcovered ſleeping on the ground after my landing, the Emperor had early notice of it by an expreſs; and determined in council, that I ſhould be tied in the manner I have related, (which was done in the night while I ſlept); that plenty of meat and drink ſhould be ſent to me, and a machine prepared to carry me to the capital city.

This reſolution perhaps may appear very bold and dangerous, and I am confident would not be imitated by any prince in Europe on the like occaſion. However, in my opinion, it was extremely prudent, as well as generous; for, ſuppoſing thoſe people had endeavoured to kill me with their ſpears and arrows while I was aſleep, I ſhould certainly have awaked with the firſt ſenſe of ſmart, which might ſo far have rouzed my rage and ſtrength, as to have enabled me to break the ſtrings wherewith I was tied; after which, as they were not able to make reſiſtance, ſo they could expect no mercy.

Theſe

Theſe people are moſt excellent mathematicians, and arrived to a great perfection in mechanics, by the countenance and encouragement of the Emperor, who is a renowned patron of learning. This prince hath ſeveral machines fixed on wheels, for the carriage of trees and other great weights. He often builds his largeſt men of war, whereof ſome are nine feet long, in the woods where the timber grows, and has them carried on theſe engines three or four hundred yards to the ſea. Five hundred carpenters and engineers were immediately ſet at work, to prepare the greateſt engine they had. It was a frame of wood raiſed three inches from the ground, about ſeven feet long, and four wide, moving upon twenty-two wheels. The ſhout I heard was upon the arrival of this engine, which it ſeems ſet out in four hours after my landing. It was brought parallel to me, as I lay. But the principal difficulty was to raiſe and place me in this vehicle. Eighty poles, each of one foot high, were erected for this purpoſe, and very ſtrong cords, of the bigneſs of pack-thread, were faſtened by hooks to many bandages, which the workmen had girt round my neck, my hands, my body, and my legs. Nine hundred of the ſtrongeſt men were employed to draw up theſe cords by many pullies faſtened on the poles, and thus, in leſs than three hours, I was raiſed and flung into the engine, and there tied faſt. All this I was told, for, while the whole operation was performing, I lay in a profound ſleep by the force

of

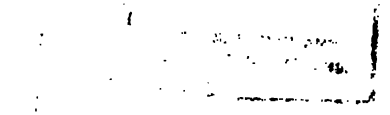
of that ſoporiferous medicine infuſed into my liquor. Fifteen hundred of the Emperor's largeſt horſes, each about four inches and an half high, were employed to draw me towards the metropolis, which, as I ſaid, was half a mile diſtant.

About four hours after we began our journey, I awaked by a very ridiculous accident; for the carriage being ſtopt a-while to adjuſt ſomething that was out of order, two or three of the young natives had the curioſity to ſee how I looked when I was aſleep; they climbed up into the engine, and advancing very ſoftly to my face, one of them, an officer in the guards, put the ſharp end of his half-pike a good way into my left noſtril, which tickled my noſe like a ſtraw, and made me ſneeze violently *: Whereupon they ſtole off unperceived, and it was three weeks before I knew the cauſe of my awaking ſo ſuddenly. We made a long march the remaining part of the day, and reſted at night with five hundred guards on each ſide of me, half with torches, and half with bows and arrows, ready to ſhoot me, if I ſhould offer to ſtir. The next morning,

I

* It has been remarked, that courage in whatever cauſe, though it ſometimes excites indignation, is never the object of contempt; but this appears to be true, only becauſe courage is ſuppoſed to imply ſuperiority: For this *officer in the guard* becomes extremely ridiculous and contemptible, by an act of the moſt daring curioſity, which ſets him in compariſon with Gulliver; to whom he was ſo much inferior, that a blaſt of the *man-mountain's* noſtrils would have endangered his life; and if heroiſm itſelf is not proof againſt ridicule, thoſe ſurely are Lilliputians in philoſophy, who conſider ridicule as the teſt of truth. *Hawkeſ.*

A. Ball Sculp.



morning, at ſun-riſe, we continued our march, and arrived within two hundred yards of the city-gates about noon. The Emperor, and all his court, came out to meet us; but his great officers would by no means ſuffer his Majeſty to endanger his perſon, by mounting on my body.

At the place where the carriage ſtopt, there ſtood an ancient temple, eſteemed to be the largeſt in the whole kingdom, which, having been polluted ſome years before by an unnatural murder, was, according to the zeal of thoſe people, looked upon as prophane, and therefore had been applied to common uſe, and all the ornaments and furniture carried away. In this edifice it was determined I ſhould lodge. The great gate fronting to the north was about four feet high, and almoſt two feet wide, through which I could eaſily creep. On each ſide of the gate was a ſmall window, not above ſix inches from the ground: Into that on the left ſide, the King's ſmith conveyed fourſcore and eleven chains, like thoſe that hang to a lady's watch in Europe, and almoſt as large, which were locked to my left leg with ſix and thirty padlocks. Over-againſt this temple, on the other ſide of the great high-way, at twenty feet diſtance, there was a turret at leaſt five feet high. Here the Emperor aſcended, with many principal lords of his court, to have an opportunity of viewing me, as I was told, for I could not ſee them. It was reckoned, that above an hundred thouſand in-

habitants came out of the town upon the ſame errand; and in ſpite of my guards, I believe, there could not be fewer than ten thouſand, at ſeveral times, who mounted my body by the help of ladders. But a proclamation was ſoon iſſued, to forbid it upon pain of death. When the workmen found it was impoſſible for me to break looſe, they cut all the ſtrings that bound me; whereupon I roſe up with as melancholy a diſpoſition, as ever I had in my life. But the noiſe and aſtoniſhment of the people at ſeeing me riſe and walk, are not to be expreſſed. The chains that held my left leg, were about two yards long, and gave me not only the liberty of walking backwards and forwards in a ſemicircle; but, being fixed within four inches of the gate, allowed me to creep in, and lie at my full length in the temple.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The Emperor of Lilliput, attended by ſeveral of the nobility, comes to ſee the author in his confinement. The Emperor's perſon and habit deſcribed. Learned men appointed to teach the author their language. He gains favour by his mild diſpoſition. His pockets are ſearched, and his ſword and piſtols taken from him.

WHEN I found myſelf on my feet, I looked about me, and muſt confeſs I never beheld a more entertaining proſpect. The country around appeared like a continued garden; and the incloſed fields, which were generally forty feet ſquare, reſembled ſo many beds of flowers. Theſe fields were intermingled with woods of half a ſtang *; and the talleſt trees, as I could judge, appeared to be ſeven feet high. I viewed the town on my left hand, which looked like the painted ſcene of a city in a theatre.

I had been for ſome hours extremely preſſed by the neceſſities of nature; which was no wonder, it being almoſt two days ſince I had laſt diſburthened myſelf. I was under great difficulties between urgency and ſhame. The beſt expedient I could think on, was to creep into my houſe, which I accordingly did; and, ſhutting the gate after me, I went as far as the length

* A *ſtang* is a pole or *perch*, ſixteen feet and an half. Hawkeſ.

of my chain would ſuffer, and diſcharged my body of that uneaſy load. But this was the only time I was ever guilty of ſo uncleanly an action; for which I cannot but hope the candid reader will give ſome allowance, after he hath maturely and impartially conſidered my caſe, and the diſtreſs I was in. From this time my conſtant practice was, as ſoon as I roſe, to perform that buſineſs in open air, at the full extent of my chain; and due care was taken every morning, before company came, that the offenſive matter ſhould be carried off in wheel-barrows, by two ſervants appointed for that purpoſe. I would not have dwelt ſo long upon a circumſtance, that perhaps at firſt ſight may appear not very momentous, if I had not thought it neceſſary to juſtify my character, in point of cleanlineſs, to the world; which I am told ſome of my maligners have been pleaſed, upon this and other occaſions, to call in queſtion.

When this adventure was at an end, I came back out of my houſe, having occaſion for freſh air. The Emperor was already deſcended from the tower, and advancing on horſe-back towards me, which had like to have coſt him dear; for the beaſt, though very well trained, yet wholly unuſed to ſuch a ſight, which appeared as if a mountain moved before him, reared up on his hinder feet: But that prince, who is an excellent horſeman, kept his ſeat, till his attendants ran in, and held his bridle, while his Majeſty had time to diſmount. When he alighted, he ſurveyed me round with great admiration; but kept

beyond

beyond the length of my chain. He ordered his cooks and butlers, who were already prepared, to give me victuals and drink, which they puſhed forward in a ſort of vehicles upon wheels, till I could reach them. I took theſe vehicles, and ſoon emptied them all; twenty of them were filled with meat, and ten with liquor; each of the former afforded me two or three good mouthfuls; and I emptied the liquor of ten veſſels, which was contained in earthen vials, into one vehicle, drinking it off at a draught; and ſo I did with the reſt. The Empreſs, and young princes of the blood of both ſexes, attended by many ladies, ſat at ſome diſtance in their chairs; but, upon the accident that happened to the Emperor's horſe, they alighted, and came near his perſon, which I am now going to deſcribe. He is taller by almoſt the breadth of my nail, than any of his court, which alone is enough to ſtrike an awe into the beholders. His features are ſtrong and maſculine, with an Auſtrian lip and arched noſe, his complexion olive, his countenance erect, his body and limbs well proportioned, all his motions graceful, and his deportment majeſtic. He was then paſt his prime, being twenty-eight years and three quarters old, of which he had reigned about ſeven in great felicity, and generally victorious. For the better convenience of beholding him, I lay on my ſide, ſo that my face was parallel to his, and he ſtood but three yards off: However, I have had him ſince many times in my hand, and therefore can-

not be deceived in the deſcription. His dreſs was very plain and ſimple, and the faſhion of it between the *Aſiatic* and the *European*: But he had on his head a light helmet of gold, adorned with jewels, and a plume on the creſt. He held his ſword drawn in his hand, to defend himſelf, if I ſhould happen to break looſe *; it was almoſt three inches long; the hilt and ſcabbard were gold enriched with diamonds. His voice was ſhrill, but very clear and articulate, and I could diſtinctly hear it when I ſtood up. The ladies and courtiers were all moſt magnificently clad, ſo that the ſpot they ſtood upon ſeemed to reſemble a petticoat ſpread on the ground, embroidered with figures of gold and ſilver. His Imperial Majeſty ſpoke often to me, and I returned anſwers; but neither of us could underſtand a ſyllable. There were ſeveral of his prieſts and lawyers preſent, (as I conjectured by their habits) who were commanded to addreſs themſelves to me; and I ſpoke to them in as many languages as I had the leaſt ſmattering of, which were *High* and *Low Dutch*, *Latin*, *French*, *Spaniſh*, *Italian* and *Lingua Franca*; but all to no purpoſe.

After

* The maſculine ſtrength of features, which Gulliver could not ſee, till he laid his face upon the ground; and the awful ſuperiority of ſtature in a being, whom he held in his hand; the helmet, the plume, and the ſword, are a fine reproof of human pride; the objects of which are trifling diſtinctions, whether of perſon or rank; the ridiculous parade and oſtentation of a pigmy; which derive not only their origin, but their uſe, from the folly, weakneſs, and imperfection of *ourſelves and others*. *Hawkeſ.*

After about two hours the court retired, and I was left with a ſtrong guard to prevent the impertinence, and probably the malice of the rabble, who were very impatient to croud about me as near as they durſt; and ſome of them had impudence to ſhoot their arrows at me, as I ſat on the ground by the door of my houſe, whereof one very narrowly miſſed my left eye. But the colonel ordered ſix of the ring-leaders to be ſeized, and thought no puniſhment ſo proper as to deliver them bound into my hands; which ſome of his ſoldiers accordingly did, puſhing them forward with the but-ends of their pikes into my reach: I took them all on my right hand, put five of them into my coat-pocket; and as to the the ſixth, I made a countenance as if I would eat him alive. The poor man ſqualled terribly, and the colonel and his officers were in much pain, eſpecially when they ſaw me take out my penknife: But I ſoon put them out of fear; for, looking mildly, and immediately cutting the ſtrings he was bound with, I ſet him gently on the ground, and away he ran. I treated the reſt in the ſame manner, taking them one by one out of my pocket; and I obſerved both the ſoldiers and people were highly delighted at this mark of my clemency, which was repreſented very much to my advantage at court.

Towards night I got with ſome difficulty into my houſe, where I lay on the ground, and continued to do ſo about a fortnight; during which time the Emperor gave orders to have a bed prepared for me.

me. Six hundred beds of the common meaſure were brought in carriages, and worked up in my houſe; an hundred and fifty of their beds, ſewn together, made up the breadth and length; and theſe were four double, which however kept me but very indifferently from the hardneſs of the floor, that was of ſmooth ſtone. By the ſame computation they provided me with ſheets and blankets, and coverlets, tolerable enough for one who had been ſo long inured to hardſhips*.

As the news of my arrival ſpread through the kingdom, it brought prodigious numbers of rich, idle, and curious people to ſee me; ſo that the villages were almoſt emptied; and great neglect of tillage and houſehold affairs muſt have enſued, if his Imperial Majeſty had not provided, by ſeveral proclamations and orders of ſtate, againſt this inconveniency. He directed, that thoſe who had already beheld me, ſhould return home, and not preſume to come within fifty yards of my houſe without licence from court; whereby the ſecretaries of ſtate got conſiderable fees.

In

* Gulliver has obſerved great exactneſs in the juſt proportion and appearances of the ſeveral objects thus leſſened and magnified. But he dwells too much upon theſe optical deceptions. The mind is tired with a repetition of them, eſpecially as he points out no beauty or uſe in ſuch amazing diſcoveries, which might have been ſo continued as to have afforded improvement, at the ſame time that they gave aſtoniſhment. He too often ſhews an indelicacy that is not agreeable, and exerts his vein of humour moſt improperly in ſome places, where, I am afraid, he glances at religion. *Orrery.*

In the mean time the Emperor held frequent councils, to debate what courſe ſhould be taken with me; and I was afterwards aſſured by a particular friend, a perſon of great quality, who was as much in the ſecret as any, that the court was under many difficulties concerning me. They apprehended my breaking looſe; that my diet would be very expenſive, and might cauſe a famine. Sometimes they determined to ſtarve me, or at leaſt to ſhoot me in the face and hands with poiſoned arrows, which would ſoon diſpatch me; but again they conſidered, that the ſtench of ſo large a carcaſe might produce a plague in the metropolis, and probably ſpread through the whole kingdom. In the midſt of theſe conſultations, ſeveral officers of the army went to the door of the great council-chamber; and two of them being admitted, gave an account of my behaviour to the ſix criminals above mentioned, which made ſo favourable an impreſſion in the breaſt of his Majeſty, and the whole board, in my behalf, that an imperial commiſſion was iſſued out, obliging all the villages nine hundred yards round the city, to deliver in every morning ſix beeves, forty ſheep, and other victuals for my ſuſtenance; together with a proportionable quantity of bread, and wine, and other liquors; for the due payment of which his Majeſty gave aſſignments upon his treaſury. For this prince lives chiefly upon his own demeſnes, ſeldom, except upon great occaſions, raiſing any ſubſidies upon his ſubjects, who are bound to attend him in his wars at their

own

bus ſleſtrin) after the ſtricteſt ſearch, we found one great piece of coarſe cloth, large enough to be a foot-cloth for your Majeſty's chief room of ſtate. In the left pocket we ſaw a huge ſilver cheſt, with a cover of the ſame metal, which we the ſearchers were not able to lift. We deſired it ſhould be opened; and one of us ſtepping into it, found himſelf up to the mid leg in a ſort of duſt, ſome part whereof flying up to our faces, ſet us both a ſneezing for ſeveral times together. In his right waiſtcoat-pocket we found a prodigious bundle of white thin ſubſtances, folded one over another, about the bigneſs of three men, tied with a ſtrong cable, and marked with black figures; which we humbly conceive to be writings, every letter almoſt half as large as the palm of our hands. In the left there was a ſort of engine, from the back of which were extended twenty long poles, reſembling the paliſadoes before your Majeſty's court; wherewith we conjecture the *man-mountain* combs his head; for we did not always trouble him with queſtions, becauſe we found it a great difficulty to make him underſtand us. In the large pocket on the right ſide of his middle cover (ſo I tranſlate the word *Ranfu-lo*, by which they meant my breeches) we ſaw a hollow pillar of iron, about the length of a man, faſtened to a ſtrong piece of timber, larger than the pillar; and upon one ſide of the pillar were huge pieces of iron ſticking out, cut into ſtrange figures, which we know not what to make of. In the left pocket, another engine of the

kind. In the ſmaller pocket on the right were ſeveral round flat pieces of white and netal of different bulk; ſome of the white, h ſeemed to be ſilver, were ſo large and y, that my comrade and I could hardly lift ı. In the left pocket, were two black pillars, ;ularly ſhaped: We could not without diffi- r reach to the top of them, as we ſtood at the ɔm of his pocket. One of them was cover- and ſeemed all of a piece: But at the upper of the other there appeared a white round ɾance, about twice the bigneſs of our heads. hin each of theſe was incloſed a prodigious : of ſteel; which, by our orders, we obliged to ſhew us, becauſe we apprehended they ıt be dangerous engines. He took them out ıeir caſes, and told us, that in his own coun- his practice was to ſhave his beard with one :heſe, and to cut his meat with the other. re were two pockets, which we could not en- Theſe he called his fobs; they were two e ſlits cut into the top of his middle cover, ſqueezed cloſe by the preſſure of his belly. of the right fob hung a great ſilver chain, ı a wonderful kind of engine at the bottom. directed him to draw out whatever was at the of that chain; which appeared to be a globe, ſilver, and half of ſome tranſparent metal: on the tranſparent ſide we ſaw certain ſtrange res circularly drawn, and thought we could :h them, till we found our fingers ſtopped by lucid ſubſtance. He put this engine to our

ears, which made an inceſſant noiſe like that of a water-mill; and we conjecture it is either ſome unknown animal, or the god that he worſhips; but we are more inclined to the latter opinion, becauſe he aſſured us (if we underſtood him right, for he expreſſed himſelf very imperfectly) that he ſeldom did any thing without conſulting it. He called it his oracle, and ſaid it pointed out the time for every action of his life *. From the left fob he took out a net almoſt large enough for a fiſherman, but contrived to open and ſhut like a purſe, and ſerved him for the ſame uſe: We found therein ſeveral maſſy pieces of yellow metal, which, if they be real gold, muſt be of immenſe value.

Having thus, in obedience to your Majeſty's commands, diligently ſearched all his pockets, we obſerved a girdle about his waiſt, made of the hide of ſome prodigious animal, from which on the left ſide hung a ſword of the length of five men; and on the right a bag or pouch divided into two cells, each cell capable of holding three of your Majeſty's ſubjects. In one of theſe cells were ſeveral globes, or balls, of a moſt ponderous metal, about the bigneſs of our heads, and required a ſtrong hand to lift them: The other cell contained a heap of certain black grains, but of no

* Perhaps the author intended to expoſe the probable fallacy of opinions derived from the relations of travellers, by ſhewing, how little truth need to be miſunderſtood to make falſehood ſpecious. *Hawkeſ.*

no great bulk or weight, for we could hold above fifty of them in the palms of our hands.

This is an exact inventory of what we found about the body of the *man-mountain*, who uſed us with great civility, and due reſpect to your Majeſty's commiſſion. Signed and ſealed, on the fourth day of the eighty-ninth moon of your Majeſty's auſpicious reign.

Clefrin Freloc, Marſi Freloc.

When this inventory was read over to the Emperor, he directed me, although in very gentle terms, to deliver up the ſeveral particulars. He firſt called for my ſcymiter, which I took out, ſcabbard and all. In the mean time he ordered three thouſand of his choiceſt troops (who then attended him) to ſurround me at a diſtance, with their bows and arrows juſt ready to diſcharge: But I did not obſerve it, for mine eyes were wholly fixed upon his Majeſty. He then deſired me to draw my ſcymiter, which, although it had got ſome ruſt by the ſea-water, was in moſt parts exceeding bright. I did ſo, and immediately all the troops gave a ſhout between terror and ſurprize; for the ſun ſhone clear, and the reflection dazzled their eyes, as I waved the ſcymiter to and fro in my hand. His Majeſty, who is a moſt magnanimous prince *, was leſs daunted than I

* He who does not find himſelf diſpoſed to honour this magnanimity ſhould reflect, that a right to judge of moral and intellectual excellence is, with great abſurdity and injuſtice, arrogated by him who admires, in a being ſix feet high, any qualities that he deſpiſes in one whoſe ſtature does not exceed ſix inches. *Hawkeſ.*

could expect; he ordered me to return it into the ſcabbard, and caſt it on the ground as gently as I could, about ſix feet from the end of my chain. The next thing he demanded, was one of the iron hollow pillars; by which he meant my pocket-piſtols. I drew it out, and at his deſire, as well as I could, expreſſed to him the uſe of it, and charging it only with powder, which by the cloſeneſs of my pouch happened to eſcape wetting in the ſea (an inconvenience againſt which all prudent mariners take ſpecial care to provide) I firſt cautioned the Emperor not to be afraid, and then I let it off in the air. The aſtoniſhment here was much greater than at the ſight of my ſcymiter. Hundreds fell down, as if they had been ſtruck dead; and even the Emperor, although he ſtood his ground, could not recover himſelf in ſome time. I delivered up both my piſtols in the ſame manner as I had done my ſcymiter, and then my pouch of powder and bullets; begging him that the former might be kept from fire, for it would kindle with the ſmalleſt ſpark, and blow up his imperial palace into the air. I likewiſe delivered up my watch, which the Emperor was very curious to ſee, and commanded two of his talleſt yeomen of the guards, to bear it on a pole upon their ſhoulders, as draymen in England do a barrel of ale. He was amazed at the continual noiſe it made, and the motion of the minute-hand, which he could eaſily diſcern; for their ſight is much more acute than ours: He aſked the opinions of his learned men about

about it, which were various and remote, as the reader may well imagine without my repeating; although indeed I could not very perfectly underſtand them. I then gave up my ſilver and copper money, my purſe with nine large pieces of gold, and ſome ſmaller ones; my knife and razor, my comb and ſilver ſnuff-box, my handkerchief and journal-book. My ſcymiter, piſtols, and pouch were conveyed in carriages to his Majeſty's ſtores; but the reſt of my goods were returned me.

I had, as I before obſerved, one private pocket which eſcaped their ſearch, wherein there was a pair of ſpectacles (which I ſometimes uſe for the weakneſs of mine eyes) a pocket perſpective, and ſome other little conveniencies; which being of no conſequence to the Emperor, I did not think myſelf bound in honour to diſcover; and I apprehended they might be loſt or ſpoiled, if I ventured them out of my poſſeſſion.

CHAP. III.

The author diverts the Emperor and his nobility of both ſexes in a very uncommon manner. The diverſions of the court of Lilliput deſcribed. The author hath his liberty granted him upon certain conditions.

MY gentleneſs and good behaviour had gained ſo far upon the Emperor and his court, and indeed upon the army, and people in general, that I began to conceive hopes of getting

my liberty in a ſhort time. I took all poſſible methods to cultivate this favourable diſpoſition. The natives came by degrees to be leſs apprehenſive of any danger from me. I would ſometimes lie down, and let five or ſix of them dance on my hand: And at laſt the boys and girls would venture to come and play at hide and ſeek in my hair. I had now made a good progreſs in underſtanding and ſpeaking their language. The Emperor had a mind one day to entertain me with ſeveral of the country ſhows, wherein they exceed all nations I have known both for dexterity and magnificence. I was diverted with none ſo much as that of the rope-dancers, performed upon a ſlender white thread, extended about two feet and ten inches from the ground. Upon which I ſhall deſire liberty, with the reader's patience, to enlarge a little.

This diverſion is only practiſed by thoſe perſons, who are candidates for great employments, and high favour at court. They are trained in this art from their youth, and are not always of noble birth, or liberal education. When a great office is vacant either by death or diſgrace (which often happens) five or ſix of thoſe candidates petition the Emperor to entertain his Majeſty and the court with a dance on the rope; and whoever jumps the higheſt without falling, ſucceeds in the office. Very often the chief miniſters themſelves are commanded to ſhew their ſkill, and to convince the Emperor that they have not loſt their faculty. Flimnap, the treaſurer, is allowed to

cut

cut a caper on the ſtrait rope, at leaſt an inch higher than any other lord in the whole empire. I have ſeen him do the ſummerſet * ſeveral times together upon a trencher, fixed on a rope, which is no thicker than a common pack-thread in England. My friend Reldreſal, principal ſecretary for private affairs, is, in my opinion, if I am not partial, the ſecond after the treaſurer; the reſt of the great officers are much upon a par.

Theſe diverſions are often attended with fatal accidents, whereof great numbers are on record. I myſelf have ſeen two or three candidates break a limb. But the danger is much greater, when the miniſters themſelves are commanded to ſhew their dexterity; for, by contending to excel themſelves and their fellows, they ſtrain ſo far, that there is hardly one of them, who hath not received a fall, and ſome of them two or three. I was aſſured, that, a year or two before my arrival, Flimnap would have infallibly broke his neck, if one of the King's cuſhions, that accidentally lay on the ground, had not weakened the force of his fall.

There is likewiſe another diverſion, which is only ſhewn before the Emperor and Empreſs, and firſt miniſter, upon particular occaſions. The Emperor lays on the table three fine ſilken threads of ſix inches long; one is blue, the other red, and the third green. Theſe threads are propoſed

* Summerſet, or ſummerſault, a gambol of a tumbler, in which he ſprings up, turns heels over head in the air, and comes down *upon his feet*. *Hawkeſ.*

ſed as prizes for thoſe perſons, whom the Emperor hath a mind to diſtinguiſh by a peculiar mark of his favour. The ceremony is performed in his Majeſty's great chamber of ſtate, where the candidates are to undergo a trial of dexterity very different from the former, and ſuch as I have not obſerved the leaſt reſemblance of in any other country of the old or new world. The Emperor holds a ſtick in his hands, both ends parallel to the horizon, while the candidates advancing, one by one, ſometimes leap over the ſtick, ſometimes creep under it backward and forward ſeveral times, according as the ſtick is advanced or depreſſed. Sometimes the Emperor holds one end of the ſtick, and his firſt miniſter the other; ſometimes the miniſter has it entirely to himſelf. Whoever performs his part with moſt agility, and holds out the longeſt in leaping and creeping, is rewarded with the blue-coloured ſilk: The red is given to the next, and the green to the third, which they all wear girt twice round about the middle; and you ſee few great perſons about this court, who are not adorned with one of theſe girdles.

The horſes of the army, and thoſe of the royal ſtables, having been daily led before me, were no longer ſhy, but would come up to my very feet without ſtarting. The riders would leap them over my hand, as I held it on the ground; and one of the Emperor's huntſmen upon a large courſer took my foot, ſhoe and all; which was indeed a prodigious leap. I had the good fortune

to

to divert the Emperor one day after a very extraordinary manner. I desired he would order several sticks of two feet high, and the thickness of an ordinary cane, to be brought me; whereupon his Majesty commanded the master of his woods to give directions accordingly, and the next morning six woodmen arrived with as many carriages, drawn by eight horses to each. I took nine of these sticks, and fixing them firmly in the ground in a quadrangular figure, two feet and a half square, I took four other sticks, and tied them parallel at each corner about two feet from the ground: Then I fastened my handkerchief to the nine sticks that stood erect; and extended it on all sides, till it was tight as the top of a drum; and the four parallel sticks, rising about five inches higher than the handkerchief, served as ledges on each side. When I had finished my work, I desired the Emperor to let a troop of his best horse, twenty-four in number, come and exercise upon this plain. His Majesty approved of the proposal, and I took them up one by one in my hands, ready mounted and armed, with the proper officers to exercise them. As soon as they got into order, they divided into two parties, performed mock skirmishes, discharged blunt arrows, drew their swords, fled and pursued, attacked and retired, and in short discovered the best military discipline I ever beheld. The parallel sticks secured them and their horses from falling over the stage; and the Emperor was so much delighted, that he ordered this entertainment to be repeated

peated ſeveral days, and once was pleaſed to be lifted up, and give the word of command; and, with great difficulty, perſuaded even the Empreſs herſelf to let me hold her in her cloſe chair within two yards of the ſtage, from whence ſhe was able to take a full view of the whole performance. It was my good fortune, that no ill accident happened in theſe entertainments; only once a fiery horſe, that belonged to one of the captains, pawing with his hoof, ſtruck a hole in my handkerchief, and his foot ſlipping, he overthrew his rider and himſelf: But I immediately relieved them both, and covering the hole with one hand, I ſet down the troop with the other, in the ſame manner as I took them up. The horſe that fell was ſtrained in the left ſhoulder, but the rider got no hurt, and I repaired my handkerchief as well as I could; however, I would not truſt to the ſtrength of it any more in ſuch dangerous enterpriſes.

About two or three days before I was ſet at liberty, as I was entertaining the court with this kind of feats, there arrived an expreſs to inform his Majeſty, that ſome of his ſubjects, riding near the place where I was firſt taken up, had ſeen a great black ſubſtance lying on the ground, very oddly ſhaped, extending its edges round as wide as his Majeſty's bed-chamber, and riſing up in the middle as high as a man; that it was no living creature, as they at firſt apprehended, for it lay on the graſs without motion; and ſome of them had walked round it ſeveral times; that, by mounting on each other's ſhoulders, they had got

to

to the top, which was flat and even, and ſtamping upon it, they found it was hollow within; that they humbly conceived it might be ſomething belonging to the *man-mountain*; and if his Majeſty pleaſed, they would undertake to bring it with only five horſes. I preſently knew what they meant, and was glad at heart to receive this intelligence. It ſeems, upon my firſt reaching the ſhore after our ſhipwreck, I was in ſuch confuſion, that, before I came to the place where I went to ſleep, my hat, which I had faſtened with a ſtring to my head, while I was rowing, and had ſtuck on all the time I was ſwimming, fell off after I came to land; the ſtring, as I conjecture, breaking by ſome accident, which I never obſerved, but thought my hat had been loſt at ſea. I intreated his Imperial Majeſty to give orders it might be brought to me as ſoon as poſſible, deſcribing to him the uſe and the nature of it: And the next day the waggon arrived with it, but not in a very good condition; they had bored two holes in the brim within an inch and a half of the edge, and faſtened two hooks in the holes; theſe hooks were tied by a long cord to the harneſs, and thus my hat was dragged along for above half an Engliſh mile; but, the ground in that country being extremely ſmooth and level, it received leſs damage than I expected.

Two days after this adventure, the Emperor, having ordered that part of his army, which quarters in and about his metropolis, to be in readineſs, took a fancy of diverting himſelf in a very

very ſingular manner. He deſired I would ſtand like a *coloſſus*, with my legs as far aſunder as I conveniently could. He then commanded his general (who was an old experienced leader, and a great patron of mine) to draw up the troops in cloſe order, and march them under me; the foot by twenty-four in a breaſt, and the horſe by ſixteen, with drums beating, colours flying, and pikes advanced. This body conſiſted of three thouſand foot, and a thouſand horſe. His Majeſty gave orders, upon pain of death, that every ſoldier in his march ſhould obſerve the ſtricteſt decency with regard to my perſon; which however could not prevent ſome of the younger officers from turning up their eyes, as they paſſed under me: And, to confeſs the truth, my breeches were at that time in ſo ill a condition, that they afforded ſome opportunities for laughter and admiration.

I had ſent ſo many memorials and petitions for my liberty, that his Majeſty at length mentioned the matter, firſt in the cabinet, and then in a full council; where it was oppoſed by none, except Skyreſh Bolgolam, who was pleaſed, without any provocation, to be my mortal enemy. But it was carried againſt him by the whole board, and confirmed by the Emperor. That miniſter was *galbet*, or admiral of the realm, very much in his maſter's confidence, and a perſon well verſed in affairs, but of a moroſe and ſour complexion. However he was at length perſuaded to comply; but prevailed that the articles and conditions up-

on which I ſhould be ſet free, and to which I muſt ſwear, ſhould be drawn up by himſelf. Theſe articles were brought to me by Skyreſh Bolgolam in perſon, attended by two under-ſecretaries, and ſeveral perſons of diſtinction. After they were read, I was demanded to ſwear to the performance of them; firſt in the manner of my own country, and afterwards in the method preſcribed by their laws, which was to hold my right foot in my left hand, and to place the middle finger of my right hand on the crown of my head, and my thumb on the tip of my right ear. But becauſe the reader may be curious to have ſome idea of the ſtyle and manner of expreſſion peculiar to that people, as well as to know the articles upon which I recovered my liberty, I have made a tranſlation of the whole inſtrument, word for word, as near as I was able, which I here offer to the public.

Golbaſto Momaren Evlame Gurdilo Shefin Mully Ully Gue, Moſt Mighty Emperor of Lilliput, delight and terror of the univerſe, whoſe dominions extend five thouſand *bleſtrugs* (about twelve miles in circumference) to the extremities of the globe; monarch of all monarchs, taller than the ſons of men; whoſe feet preſs down to the centre, and whoſe head ſtrikes againſt the ſun; at whoſe nod the princes of the earth ſhake their knees; pleaſant as the ſpring, comfortable as the ſummer, fruitful as autumn, dreadful as winter. His moſt Sublime Majeſty propoſeth to the *man-mountain*, lately arrived at our celeſtial dominions, the following

lowing articles, which by a ſolemn oath he ſhall be obliged to perform.

1*ſt*, The *man-mountain* ſhall not depart from our dominions, without our licence under our great ſeal.

2*d*, He ſhall not preſume to come into our metropolis, without our expreſs order; at which time the inhabitants ſhall have two hours warning to keep within doors.

3*d*, The ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall confine his walks to our principal high-roads, and not offer to walk or lie down in a meadow or field of corn.

4*th*, As he walks the ſaid roads, he ſhall take the utmoſt care not to trample upon the bodies of any of our loving ſubjects, their horſes, or carriages; nor take any of our ſubjects into his hands, without their own conſent.

5*th*, If an expreſs requires extraordinary diſpatch, the *man-mountain* ſhall be obliged to carry in his pocket the meſſenger and horſe a ſix days journey once in every moon, and return the ſaid meſſenger back (if ſo required) ſafe to our Imperial preſence.

6*th*, He ſhall be our ally againſt our neighbours in the iſland of Blefuſcu *, and do his utmoſt

* In his deſcription of Lilliput, the author ſeems to have had England more immediately in view. In his deſcription of Blefuſcu, he ſeems to intend the people and kingdom of France. Yet the allegory between theſe nations is frequently interrupted, and ſcarce any where complete. Several juſt ſtrokes of ſatire are ſcattered here and there, upon errors in the conduct of our government. *Orrery.*

moſt to deſtroy the fleet, which is now preparing to invade us.

7*th*, That the ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall, at his times of leiſure, be aiding and aſſiſting to our workmen, in helping to raiſe certain great ſtones, towards covering the wall of the principal park, and other our royal buildings.

8*th*, That the ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall, in two moons time, deliver in an exact ſurvey of the circumference of our dominions, by a computation of his own paces round the coaſt.

Laſtly, That, upon his ſolemn oath to obſerve all the above articles, the ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall have a daily allowance of meat and drink, ſufficient for the ſupport of 1724 of our ſubjects; with free acceſs to our royal perſon, and other marks of our favour. Given at our palace at Belfaborac, the twelfth day of the ninety-firſt moon of our reign.

I ſwore and ſubſcribed to theſe articles with great chearfulneſs and content, although ſome of them were not ſo honourable as I could have wiſhed; which proceeded wholly from the malice of Skyreſh Bolgolam, the high admiral; whereupon my chains were immediately unlocked, and I was full at liberty. The Emperor himſelf, in perſon, did me the honour to be by at the whole ceremony. I made my acknowledgements, by proſtrating myſelf at his Majeſty's feet; but he commanded me to riſe; and after many gracious expreſſions, which, to avoid the cenſure of vanity,

I ſhall not repeat, he added, that he hoped I ſhould prove a uſeful ſervant, and well deſerve all the favours he had already conferred upon me, or might do for the future.

The reader may pleaſe to obſerve, that, in the laſt article for the recovery of my liberty, the Emperor ſtipulates to allow me a quantity of meat and drink ſufficient for the ſupport of 1724 Lilliputians. Some time after aſking a friend at court, how they came to fix on that determined number; he told me, that his Majeſty's mathematicians, having taken the height of my body by the help of a *quadrant*, and finding it to exceed theirs in the proportion of twelve to one, they concluded from the ſimilarity of their bodies, that mine muſt contain at leaſt 1724 of theirs, and conſequently would require as much food as was neceſſary to ſupport that number of Lilliputians. By which the reader may conceive an idea of the ingenuity of that people, as well as the prudent and exact œconomy of ſo great a prince.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Mildendo, the metropolis of Lilliput, deſcribed, together with the Emperor's palace. A converſation between the author and a principal ſecretary, concerning the affairs of that empire. The author's offers to ſerve the Emperor in his wars.

THE firſt requeſt I made, after I had obtained my liberty, was, that I might have licence to ſee Mildendo, the metropolis; which the Emperor eaſily granted me, but with a ſpecial charge to do no hurt either to the inhabitants or their houſes. The people had notice, by proclamation, of my deſign to viſit the town. The wall, which encompaſſed it, is two feet and a half high, and at leaſt eleven inches broad, ſo that a coach and horſes may be driven very ſafely round it; and it is flanked with ſtrong towers at ten feet diſtance. I ſtept over the great weſtern gate, and paſſed very gently, and ſideling, through the two principal ſtreets, only in my ſhort waiſtcoat, for fear of damaging the roofs and eves of the houſes with the ſkirts of my coat. I walked with the utmoſt circumſpection, to avoid treading on any ſtragglers who might remain in the ſtreets; although the orders were very ſtrict, that all people ſhould keep in their houſes at their own peril. The garret-windows, and tops of houſes, were ſo crouded with ſpecta-

I ſhall not repeat, he added, that he hoped I ſhould prove a uſeful ſervant, and well deſerve all the favours he had already conferred upon me, or might do for the future.

The reader may pleaſe to obſerve, that, in the laſt article for the recovery of my liberty, the Emperor ſtipulates to allow me a quantity of meat and drink ſufficient for the ſupport of 1724 Lilliputians. Some time after aſking a friend at court, how they came to fix on that determined number; he told me, that his Majeſty's mathematicians, having taken the height of my body by the help of a *quadrant*, and finding it to exceed theirs in the proportion of twelve to one, they concluded from the ſimilarity of their bodies, that mine muſt contain at leaſt 1724 of theirs, and conſequently would require as much food as was neceſſary to ſupport that number of Lilliputians. By which the reader may conceive an idea of the ingenuity of that people, as well as the prudent and exact economy of ſo great a prince.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Mildendo, the metropolis of Lilliput, deſcribed, together with the Emperor's palace. A converſation between the author and a principal ſecretary, concerning the affairs of that empire. The author's offers to ſerve the Emperor in his wars.

THE firſt requeſt I made, after I had obtained my liberty, was, that I might have licence to ſee Mildendo, the metropolis; which the Emperor eaſily granted me, but with a ſpecial charge to do no hurt either to the inhabitants or their houſes. The people had notice, by proclamation, of my deſign to viſit the town. The wall, which encompaſſed it, is two feet and a half high, and at leaſt eleven inches broad, ſo that a coach and horſes may be driven very ſafely round it; and it is flanked with ſtrong towers at ten feet diſtance. I ſtept over the great weſtern gate, and paſſed very gently, and ſideling, through the two principal ſtreets, only in my ſhort waiſtcoat, for fear of damaging the roofs and eves of the houſes with the ſkirts of my coat. I walked with the utmoſt circumſpection, to avoid treading on any ſtragglers who might remain in the ſtreets; although the orders were very ſtrict, that all people ſhould keep in their houſes at their own peril. The garret-windows, and tops of houſes, were ſo crouded with ſpecta-

tors, that I thought in all my travels I had not ſeen a more populous place. The city is an exact ſquare, each ſide of the wall being five hundred feet long. The two great ſtreets, which run acroſs and divide it into four quarters, are five feet wide. The lanes and alleys, which I could not enter, but only viewed them as I paſſed, are from twelve to eighteen inches. The town is capable of holding five hundred thouſand ſouls: The houſes are from three to five ſtories: The ſhops and markets well provided.

The Emperor's palace is in the centre of the city, where the two great ſtreets meet. It is incloſed by a wall of two feet high, and twenty feet diſtance from the buildings. I had his Majeſty's permiſſion to ſtep over this wall; and the ſpace being ſo wide between that and the palace, I could eaſily view it on every ſide. The outward court is a ſquare of forty feet, and includes two other courts: In the inmoſt are the royal apartments, which I was very deſirous to ſee, but found it extremely difficult; for the great gates, from one ſquare into another, were but eighteen inches high, and ſeven inches wide. Now, the buildings of the outer court were at leaſt five feet high; and it was impoſſible for me to ſtride over them without infinite damage to the pile, though the walls were ſtrongly built of hewn ſtone, and four inches thick. At the ſame time the Emperor had a great deſire, that I ſhould ſee the magnificence of his palace; but this I was not able to do till three days after, which

which I ſpent in cutting down, with my knife, ſome of the largeſt trees in the royal park, about an hundred yards diſtance from the city. Of theſe trees I made two ſtools, each about three feet high, and ſtrong enough to bear my weight. The people having received notice a ſecond time, I went again through the city to the palace with my two ſtools in my hands. When I came to the ſide of the outer court, I ſtood upon one ſtool, and took the other in my hand; this I lifted over the roof, and gently ſet it down on the ſpace between the firſt and ſecond court, which was eight feet wide. I then ſtept over the building very conveniently from one ſtool to the other, and drew up the firſt after me with a hooked ſtick. By this contrivance I got into the inmoſt court; and, lying down upon my ſide, I applied my face to the windows of the middle ſtories, which were left open on purpoſe, and diſcovered the moſt ſplendid apartments that can be imagined. There I ſaw the Empreſs and the young princes in their ſeveral lodgings, with their chief attendants about them. Her Imperial Majeſty was pleaſed to ſmile very graciouſly upon me, and gave me out of the window her hand to kiſs.

But I ſhall not anticipate the reader with further deſcriptions of this kind; becauſe I reſerve them for a greater work, which is now almoſt ready for the preſs, containing a general deſcription of this Empire, from its firſt erection through a long ſeries of princes, with a particular

cular account of their wars and politics, laws, learning and religion, their plants and animals, their peculiar manners and cuſtoms, with other matters very curious and uſeful; my chief deſign at preſent being only to relate ſuch events and tranſactions, as happened to the public or to myſelf, during a reſidence of about nine months in that empire.

One morning, about a fortnight after I had obtained my liberty, Reldreſal, principal ſecretary (as they ſtile him) for private affairs, came to my houſe attended only by one ſervant. He ordered his coach to wait at a diſtance, and deſired I would give him an hour's audience; which I readily conſented to, on account of his quality and perſonal merits, as well as of the many good offices he had done me during my ſolicitations at court. I offered to lie down, that he might the more conveniently reach my ear; but he choſe rather to let me hold him in my hand during our converſation. He began with compliments on my liberty; ſaid, he might pretend to ſome merit in it: But however added, that, if it had not been for the preſent ſituation of things at court, perhaps I might not have obtained it ſo ſoon. For, ſaid he, as flouriſhing a condition as we may appear to be in to foreigners, we labour under two mighty evils; a violent faction at home, and the danger of an invaſion by a moſt potent enemy from abroad. As to the firſt, you are to underſtand, that, for above ſeventy moons paſt, there have been two ſtruggling parties in this

this empire, under the names of Trameckſan, and Slameckſan *, from the high and low heels of their ſhoes, by which they diſtinguiſh themſelves. It is alledged, indeed, that the high heels are moſt agreeable to our ancient conſtitution; but however this be, his Majeſty had determined to make uſe only of low heels in the adminiſtration of the government, and all offices in the gift of the crown, as you cannot but obſerve; and particularly, that his Majeſty's imperial heels are lower at leaſt by a *drurr* than any of his court (*drurr* is a meaſure about the fourteenth part of an inch). The animoſities between theſe two parties run ſo high, that they will neither eat nor drink, nor talk with each other. We compute the Trameckſan, or high-heels, to exceed us in number; but the power is wholly on our ſide. We apprehend his Imperial Highneſs, the heir to the crown, to have ſome tendency towards the high-heels; at leaſt, we can plainly diſcover, that one of his heels is higher than the other, which gives him a hobble in his gait. Now, in the midſt of theſe inteſtine diſquiets, we are threatened with an invaſion from the iſland of Blefuſcu, which is the other great empire of the univerſe, almoſt as large and powerful as this

* *High-Church* and *Low-Church*, or *Whig* and *Tory*. As every *accidental difference* between man and man in perſon and circumſtances, is by this work rendered extremely contemptible; ſo *ſpeculative differences* are ſhewn to be equally ridiculous, when the zeal, with which they are oppoſed and defended, too much exceeds their *importance*. *Hawkeſ.*

this of his Majeſty. For as to what we have heard you affirm, that there are other kingdoms and ſtates in the world inhabited by human creatures as large as yourſelf, our philoſophers are in much doubt, and would rather conjecture that you dropped from the moon, or one of the ſtars; becauſe it is certain, that an hundred mortals of your bulk would in a ſhort time deſtroy all the fruits and cattle of his Majeſty's dominions; beſides, our hiſtories of ſix thouſand moons make no mention of any other regions, than the two great empires of Lilliput and Blefuſcu. Which two mighty powers have, as I was going to tell you, been engaged in a moſt obſtinate war for ſix and thirty moons paſt. It began upon the following occaſion: It is allowed on all hands, that the primitive way of breaking eggs, before we eat them, was upon the larger end; but his preſent Majeſty's grandfather, while he was a boy, going to eat an egg, and breaking it according to the ancient practice, happened to cut one of his fingers. Whereupon the Emperor, his father, publiſhed an edict, commanding all his ſubjects, upon great penalties, to break the ſmaller end of their eggs. The people ſo highly reſented this law, that our hiſtories tell us, there have been ſix rebellions raiſed on that account; wherein one Emperor loſt his life, and another his crown. Theſe civil commotions were conſtantly fomented by the monarchs of Blefuſcu; and when they were quelled, the exiles always fled for refuge to that empire. It is computed

that

that eleven thouſand perſons have at ſeveral times ſuffered death, rather than ſubmit to break their eggs at the ſmaller end. Many hundred large volumes have been publiſhed upon this controverſy; but the books of the Big-endians have been long forbidden, and the whole party rendered incapable by law of holding employments. During the courſe of theſe troubles, the Emperors of Blefuſcu did frequently expoſtulate by their ambaſſadors, accuſing us of making a ſchiſm in religion, by offending againſt a fundamental doctrine of our great prophet Luſtrog, in the fifty-fourth chapter of the Blundecral (which is their Alcoran). This, however, is thought to be a mere ſtrain upon the text; for the words are theſe; *That all true believers break their eggs at the convenient end.* And which is the convenient end, ſeems, in my humble opinion, to be left to every man's conſcience, or at leaſt in the power of the chief magiſtrate to determine. Now, the Big-endian exiles have found ſo much credit in the Emperor of Blefuſcu's court, and ſo much private aſſiſtance and encouragement from their party here at home, that a bloody war hath been carried on between the two empires for ſix and thirty moons, with varlous ſucceſs; during which time we have loſt forty capital ſhips, and a much greater number of ſmaller veſſels, together with thirty thouſand of our beſt ſeamen and ſoldiers; and the damage received by the enemy, is reckoned to be ſomewhat greater than ours. However, they have now equipped

a numerous fleet, and are juſt preparing to make a deſcent upon us; and his Imperial Majeſty placing great confidence in your valour and ſtrength, hath commanded me to lay this account of his affairs before you.

I deſired the ſecretary to preſent my humble duty to the Emperor, and to let him know, that I thought it would not become me, who was a foreigner, to interfere with parties; but I was ready, with the hazard of my life, to defend his perſon and ſtate againſt all invaders *.

CHAP. V.

The author, by an extraordinary ſtratagem, prevents an invaſion. A high title of honour is conferred upon him. Ambaſſadors arrive from the Emperor of Blefuſcu, and ſue for peace. The Empreſs's apartment on fire by an accident; the author inſtrumental in ſaving the reſt of the palace.

THE empire of Blefuſcu is an iſland ſituated to the north-eaſt ſide of Lilliput, from whence it is parted only by a channel of eight hundred yards wide. I had not yet ſeen it; and upon this notice of an intended invaſion, I avoided appearing on that ſide of the coaſt, for

2 fear

* Gulliver, without examining the ſubject of diſpute, readily engaged to defend the Emperor againſt invaſion; becauſe he knew, that no ſuch monarch had a right to invade the dominions of another, though for the propagation of truth. *Hawkeſ.*

f being diſcovered by ſome of the enemy's who had received no intelligence of me, ercourſe between the two empires having trictly forbidden during the war upon pain th, and an embargo laid by our Emperor all veſſels whatſoever. I communicated Majeſty a project I had formed of ſeizing nemy's whole fleet; which, as our ſcouts l us, lay at anchor in the harbour, ready to ith the firſt fair wind. I conſulted the experienced ſeamen upon the depth of hannel, which they had often plumbed; old me, that in the middle, at high-water, ; ſeventy *glumgluffs* deep, which is about t of European meaſure; and the reſt of y *glumgluffs* at moſt. I walked towards north-eaſt coaſt, over againſt Blefuſcu; , lying down behind a hillock, I took out all perſpective glaſs, and viewed the ene- fleet at anchor, conſiſting of about fifty f war, and a great number of tranſports: came back to my houſe, and gave orders hich I had a warrant) for a great quantity e ſtrongeſt cable and bars of iron. The was about as thick as pack-thread, and the f the length and ſize of a knitting needle. led the cable to make it ſtronger, and for me reaſon I twiſted three of the iron bars ier, bending the extremities into a hook. g thus fixed fifty hooks to as many cables, t back to the north-eaſt coaſt, and putting y coat, ſhoes, and ſtockings, walked into

the ſea in my leathern jerkin, about half an hour before high-water. I waded with what haſte I could, and ſwam in the middle about thirty yards, till I felt ground; I arrived at the fleet in leſs than half an hour. The enemy was ſo frighted when they ſaw me, that they leaped out of their ſhips, and ſwam to ſhore, where there could not be fewer than thirty thouſand ſouls: I then took my tackling, and, faſtening a hook to the hole at the prow of each, I tied all the cords together at the end. While I was thus employed, the enemy diſcharged ſeveral thouſand arrows, many of which ſtuck in my hands and face; and, beſides the exceſſive ſmart, gave me much diſturbance in my work. My greateſt apprehenſion was for mine eyes, which I ſhould have infallibly loſt, if I had not ſuddenly thought of an expedient. I kept among other little neceſſaries a pair of ſpectacles in a private pocket, which, as I obſerved before, had eſcaped the Emperor's ſearchers. Theſe I took out, and faſtened as ſtrongly as I could upon my noſe; and thus armed went on boldly with my work in ſpight of the enemy's arrows, many of which ſtruck againſt the glaſſes of my ſpectacles, but without any other effect, farther than a little to diſcompoſe them. I had now faſtened all the hooks, and, taking the knot in my hand, began to pull; but not a ſhip would ſtir, for they were all too faſt held by their anchors, ſo that the boldeſt part of my enterprize remained. I therefore let go the cord, and leaving the hooks fixed to the

ſhips,

ſhips, I reſolutely cut with my knife the cables that faſtened the anchors, receiving above two hundred ſhots in my face and hands; then I took up the knotted end of the cables, to which my hooks were tied, and with great eaſe drew fifty of the enemy's largeſt men of war after me.

The Blefuſcudians, who had not the leaſt imagination of what I intended, were at firſt confounded with aſtoniſhment. They had ſeen me cut the cables, and thought my deſign was only to let the ſhips run a-drift, or fall foul on each other: But when they perceived the whole fleet moving in order, and ſaw me pulling at the end, they ſet up ſuch a ſcream of grief and deſpair, as it is almoſt impoſſible to deſcribe or conceive. When I had got out of danger, I ſtopt a while to pick out the arrows, that ſtuck in my hands and face; and rubbed on ſome of the ſame ointment, that was given me at my firſt arrival, as I have formerly mentioned. I then took off my ſpectacles, and waiting about an hour, till the tide was a little fallen, I waded through the middle with my cargo, and arrived ſafe at the royal port of Lilliput.

The Emperor and his whole court ſtood on the ſhore, expecting the iſſue of this great adventure. They ſaw the ſhips move forward in a large half-moon, but could not diſcern me, who was up to my breaſt in water. When I advanced to the middle of the channel, they were yet more in pain, becauſe I was under water to my neck. The Emperor concluded me to drowned, and

that the enemy's fleet was approaching in an hoſtile manner: But he was ſoon eaſed of his fears, for the channel growing ſhallower every ſtep I made, I came in a ſhort time within hearing, and holding up the end of the cable, by which the fleet was faſtened, I cried in a loud voice, *Long live the moſt puiſſant Emperor of Lilliput!* This great prince received me at my landing with all poſſible encomiums, and created me a Nardac upon the ſpot, which is the higheſt title of honour among them.

His Majeſty deſired, I would take ſome other opportunity of bringing all the reſt of his enemy's ſhips into his ports. And ſo unmeaſurable is the ambition of princes, that he ſeemed to think of nothing leſs than reducing the whole empire of Blefuſcu into a province, and governing it by a viceroy; of deſtroying the Big-endian exiles, and compelling that people to break the ſmaller end of their eggs, by which he would remain the ſole monarch of the whole world. But I endeavoured to divert him from this deſign, by many arguments drawn from the topics of policy as well as juſtice: And I plainly proteſted, that I would never be an inſtrument of bringing a free and brave people into ſlavery. And, when the matter was debated in council, the wiſeſt part of the miniſtry were of my opinion.

This open bold declaration of mine was ſo oppoſite to the ſchemes and politics of his Imperial Majeſty, that he could never forgive me; he mentioned it in a very artful manner at council, where

where I was told that ſome of the wiſeſt appeared, at leaſt by their ſilence, to be of my opinion; but others, who were my ſecret enemies, could not forbear ſome expreſſions, which by a ſide-wind reflected on me. And from this time began an intrigue between his Majeſty, and a junto of miniſters maliciouſly bent againſt me, which broke out in leſs than two months, and had like to have ended in my utter deſtruction. Of ſo little weight are the greateſt ſervices to princes, when put into the balance with a refuſal to gratify their paſſions.

About three weeks after this exploit, there arrived a ſolemn embaſſy from Blefuſcu, with humble offers of a peace; which was ſoon concluded, upon conditions very advantageous to our Emperor, wherewith I ſhall not trouble the reader. There were ſix ambaſſadors, with a train of about five hundred perſons; and their entry was very magnificent, ſuitable to the grandeur of their maſter, and the importance of their buſineſs. When their treaty was finiſhed, wherein I did them ſeveral good offices by the credit I now had, or at leaſt appeared to have at court, their Excellencies, who were privately told how much I had been their friend, made me a viſit in form. They began with many compliments upon my valour and generoſity, invited me to that kingdom in the Emperor their maſter's name, and deſired me to ſhew them ſome proofs of my prodigious ſtrength, of which they had heard ſo many wonders; wherein I readily ob-

liged them, but ſhall not trouble the reader with the particulars.

When I had for ſome time entertained their Excellencies to their infinite ſatisfaction and ſurprize, I deſired they would do me the honour to preſent my moſt humble reſpects to the Emperor their maſter, the renown of whoſe virtues had ſo juſtly filled the whole world with admiration, and whoſe royal perſon I reſolved to attend before I returned to my own country: Accordingly, the next time I had the honour to ſee our Emperor, I deſired his general licence to wait on the Blefuſcudian monarch, which he was pleaſed to grant me, as I could plainly perceive, in a very cold manner; but could not gueſs the reaſon, till I had a whiſper from a certain perſon, that Flimnap and Bolgolam had repreſented my intercourſe with thoſe ambaſſadors as a mark of diſaffection, from which I am ſure my heart was wholly free. And this was the firſt time I began to conceive ſome imperfect idea of courts and miniſters.

It is to be obſerved, that theſe ambaſſadors ſpoke to me by an interpreter, the languages of both empires differing as much from each other as any two in Europe; and each nation priding itſelf upon the antiquity, beauty, and energy of their own tongues, with an avowed contempt for that of their neighbour; yet our Emperor, ſtanding upon the advantage he had got by the ſeizure of their fleet, obliged them to deliver their credentials, and make their ſpeech in the Lilliputian

Lilliputian tongue. And it muſt confeſſed, that from the great intercourſe of trade and commerce between both realms, from the continual reception of exiles, which is mutual among them, and from the cuſtom in each empire to ſend their young nobility and richer gentry to the other, in order to poliſh themſelves by ſeeing the world, and underſtanding men and manners; there are few perſons of diſtinction, or merchants, or ſeamen, who dwell in the maritime parts, but what can hold converſation in both tongues; as I found ſome weeks after, when I went to pay my reſpects to the Emperor of Bleſuſcu, which, in the midſt of great misfortunes, through the malice of my enemies, proved a very happy adventure to me, as I ſhall relate in its proper place.

The reader may remember, that when I ſigned thoſe articles upon which I recovered my liberty, there were ſome which I diſliked upon account of their being too ſervile, neither could any thing but an extreme neceſſity have forced me to ſubmit. But being now a Nardac of the higheſt rank in that empire, ſuch offices were looked upon as below my dignity, and the Emperor (to do him juſtice) never once mentioned them to me. However, it was not long before I had an opportunity of doing his Majeſty, at leaſt as I then thought, a moſt ſignal ſervice. I was alarmed at midnight with the cries of many hundred people at my door; by which being ſuddenly awaked, I was in ſome kind of terror. I heard

heard the word Burglum repeated inceſſantly: Several of the Emperor's court, making their way through the croud, intreated me to come immediately to the palace, where her Imperial Majeſty's apartment was on fire by the careleſsneſs of a maid of honour, who fell aſleep while ſhe was reading a romance. I got up in an inſtant; and orders being given to clear the way before me, and it being likewiſe a moon-ſhine night, I made a ſhift to get to the palace without trampling on any of the people. I found they had already applied ladders to the walls of the apartment, and were well provided with buckets; but the water was at ſome diſtance. Theſe buckets were about the ſize of large thimbles, and the poor people ſupplied me with them as faſt as they could; but the flame was ſo violent, that they did little good. I might eaſily have ſtifled it with my coat, which I unfortunately left behind me for haſte, and came away only in my leathern jerkin. The caſe ſeemed wholly deſperate and deplorable; and this magnificent palace would have infallibly been burnt down to the ground, if, by a preſence of mind unuſual to me, I had not ſuddenly thought of an expedient. I had the evening before drank plentifully of a moſt delicious wine called Gilmigrim (the Blefuſcudians call it Flunec, but ours is eſteemed the better ſort) which is very diuretic. By the luckieſt chance in the world I had not diſcharged myſelf of any part of it. The heat I had contracted by coming very near the flames,

, and by my labouring to quench them,
he wine begin to operate by urine; which
led in ſuch a quantity, and applied ſo
the proper places, that in three minutes
: was wholly extinguiſhed, and the reſt of
ble pile, which had coſt ſo many ages in
g, preſerved from deſtruction.

ras now day-light, and I returned to my
without waiting to congratulate with the
or: Becauſe, although I had done a very
it piece of ſervice, yet I could not tell how
ajeſty might reſent the manner by which
performed it: For, by the fundamental
f the realm, it is capital in any perſon, of
quality ſoever, to make water within the
:ts of the palace. But I was a little com-
by a meſſage from his Majeſty, that he
give orders to the grand juſticiary for
my pardon in form; which however I
not obtain. And I was privately aſſured,
he Empreſs, conceiving the greateſt ab-
ce of what I had done, removed to the
liſtant ſide of the court, firmly reſolved
oſe buildings ſhould never be repaired for
:; and, in the preſence of her chief confi-
could not forbear vowing revenge.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Of the inhabitants of Lilliput; their learning, laws, and cuſtoms, the manner of educating their children. The author's way of living in that country. His vindication of a great lady.

ALTHOUGH I intend to leave the deſcription of this empire to a particular treatiſe, yet in the mean time I am content to gratify the curious reader with ſome general ideas. As the common ſize of the natives is ſomewhat under ſix inches high, ſo there is an exact proportion in all other animals, as well as plants and trees: For inſtance, the talleſt horſes and oxen are between four and five inches in height, the ſheep an inch and half, more or leſs; their geeſe about the bigneſs of a ſparrow, and ſo the ſeveral gradations downwards, till you come to the ſmalleſt, which to my ſight were almoſt inviſible; but nature hath adapted the eyes of the Lilliputians to all objects proper for their view: They ſee with great exactneſs, but at no great diſtance. And, to ſhew the ſharpneſs of their ſight towards objects that are near, I have been much pleaſed with obſerving a cook pulling a lark, which was not ſo large as a common fly; and a young girl threading an inviſible needle with inviſible ſilk. Their talleſt trees are about

about ſeven feet high: I mean ſome of thoſe in the great royal park, the tops whereof I could but juſt reach with my fiſt clinched. The other vegetables are in the ſame proportion; but this I leave to the reader's imagination.

I ſhall ſay but little at preſent of their learning, which for many ages hath flouriſhed in all its branches among them: But their manner of writing is very peculiar, being neither from the left to the right, like the Europeans; nor from the right to the left, like the Arabians; nor from up to down, like the Chineſe; but aſlant from one corner of the paper to the other, like ladies in England.

They bury their dead with their heads directly downwards, becauſe they hold an opinion, that in eleven thouſand moons they are all to riſe again; in which period the earth (which they conceive to be flat) will turn upſide down, and by this means they ſhall at their reſurrection be found ready ſtanding on their feet *. The learned among them confeſs the abſurdity of this doctrine, but the practice ſtill continues in compliance to the vulgar †.

There

* Here the author dares even to exert his vein of humour ſo liberally as to place the reſurrection, one of the moſt encouraging principles of the Chriſtian religion, in a ridiculous and contemptible light. Why ſhould that appointment be denied to man, or appear ſo very extraordinary in the human kind, which the Author of nature has illuſtrated in the vegetable ſpecies, where the ſeed dies and corrupts, before it can riſe again to new beauty and glory? *Orrery.*

† This paragraph, if it were examined with judgment and candour,

There are ſome laws and cuſtoms in this empire very peculiar; and, if they were not ſo directly contrary to thoſe of my own dear country, I ſhould be tempted to ſay a little in their juſtification. It is only to be wiſhed they were as well executed. The firſt I ſhall mention, relates to informers. All crimes againſt the ſtate are puniſhed here with the utmoſt ſeverity; but, if the perſon accuſed maketh his innocence plainly to appear upon his trial, the accuſer is immediately put to an ignominious death; and out of his goods or lands the innocent perſon is quadruply recompenſed for the loſs of his time, for the danger he underwent, for the hardſhip of his impriſonment, and for all the charges he hath been at in making

2 his

candour, would incline us to believe, that an opinion of a life to come is connected ſo immediately with all our reaſonable faculties, that, ſuppoſing we had never been bleſſed with any revelation from God, we ſhould believe the reſurrection to life eternal. The Lilliputians believe, that after eleven thouſand moons, the earth will be turned upſide down; and upon that account they are buried with their heads directly downwards, in order to be found ſtanding upon their feet at the day of reſurrection! An opinion, which I confeſs, with the learned among themſelves, to be whimſical and ridiculous enough. But follies and abſurdities are always mixed with idolatry and ſuperſtition. The Lilliputians were rank idolaters: otherwiſe, how could they imagine Gulliver's watch to be the God that he worſhipped? And therefore I cannot but infer, that, inſtead of placing the reſurrection in a ridiculous contemptible light, Gulliver hath fairly manifeſted the opinion of a ſtate hereafter (although connected with ſome vanities and abſurdities, which are the effects of ſuperſtition) to be the ground-work of all religion, founded upon the clear and ſtrong dictates both of nature and reaſon. *Swift.*

his defence. Or, if that fund be deficient, it is largely ſupplied by the crown. The Emperor alſo confers on him ſome public mark of his favour, and proclamation is made of his innocence through the whole city.

They look upon fraud as a greater crime than theft, and therefore ſeldom fail to puniſh it with death; for they alledge, that care and vigilance, with a very common underſtanding, may preſerve a man's goods from thieves, but honeſty has no fence againſt ſuperior cunning: And ſince it is neceſſary that there ſhould be a perpetual intercourſe of buying and ſelling, and dealing upon credit; where fraud is permitted and connived at, or hath no law to puniſh it, the honeſt dealer is always undone, and the knave gets the advantage. I remember when I was once interceding with the King for a criminal, who had wronged his maſter of a great ſum of money, which he had received by order, and ran away with; and happening to tell his Majeſty, by way of extenuation, that it was only a breach of truſt; the Emperor thought it monſtrous in me to offer, as a defence, the greateſt aggravation of the crime: And truly I had little to ſay in return, farther than the common anſwer, that different nations had different cuſtoms; for, I confeſs, I was heartily aſhamed *.

Although we uſually call reward and puniſhment the two hinges upon which all government

 turns,

* An act of parliament hath been ſince paſſed, by which ſome breaches *of truſt have* been made capital. Hawkeſ.

turns, yet I could never obſerve this maxim to be put in practice by any nation, except that of Lilliput. Whoever can there bring ſufficient proof, that he hath ſtrictly obſerved the laws of his country for ſeventy-three moons, hath a claim to certain privileges, according to his quality and condition of life, with a proportionable ſum of money out of a fund appropriated for that uſe: He likewiſe acquires the title of *ſnilpall*, or *legal*, which is added to his name, but doth not deſcend to his poſterity. And theſe people thought it a prodigious defect of policy among us, when I told them, that our laws were enforced only by penalties, without any mention of reward. It is upon this account, that the image of juſtice in their courts of judicature is formed with ſix eyes, two before, as many behind, and on each ſide one, to ſignify circumſpection; with a bag of gold open in her right hand, and a ſword ſheathed in her left, to ſhew ſhe is more diſpoſed to reward than to puniſh.

In chuſing perſons for all employments, they have more regard to good morals, than to great abilities; for, ſince government is neceſſary to mankind, they believe, that the common ſize of human underſtandings is fitted to ſome ſtation or other, and that providence never intended to make the management of public affairs a myſtery to be comprehended only by a few perſons of ſublime genius, of which there ſeldom are three born in an age: But they ſuppoſe truth, juſtice, temperance, and the like, to be in every man's

man's power; the practice of which virtues, aſſiſted by experience and a good intention, would qualify any man for the ſervice of his country, except where a courſe of ſtudy is required. But they thought the want of moral virtues was ſo far from being ſupplied by ſuperior endowments of the mind, that employments could never be put into ſuch dangerous hands as thoſe of perſons ſo qualified; and at leaſt, that the miſtakes committed by ignorance in a virtuous diſpoſition, would never be of ſuch fatal conſequence to the public weal, as the practices of a man whoſe inclinations led him to be corrupt, and who had great abilities to manage, to multiply, and defend his corruptions.

In like manner, the diſbelief of a divine providence renders a man uncapable of holding any public ſtation; for, ſince kings avow themſelves to be the deputies of providence, the Lilliputians think nothing can be more abſurd, than for a prince to employ ſuch men as diſown the authority under which he acteth.

In relating theſe and the following laws, I would only be underſtood to mean the original inſtitutions, and not the moſt ſcandalous corruptions, into which theſe people are fallen by the degenerate nature of man. For as to that infamous practice of acquiring great employments by dancing on the ropes, or badges of favour and diſtinction by leaping over ſticks, and creeping under them, the reader is to obſerve, that they were firſt introduced by the grandfather of the Empe-

ror now reigning, and grew to the preſent height by the gradual increaſe of party and faction.

Ingratitude is among them a capital crime, as we read it to have been in ſome other countries; for they reaſon thus, that whoever makes ill returns to his benefactor, muſt needs be a common enemy to the reſt of mankind, from whom he hath received no obligation, and therefore ſuch a man is not fit to live.

Their notions relating to the duties of parents and children, differ extremely from ours. For, ſince the conjunction of male and female is founded upon the great law of nature, in order to propagate and continue the ſpecies, the Lilliputians will needs have it, that men and women are joined together like other animals by the motives of concupiſcence; and that their tenderneſs towards their young, proceeds from the like natural principle: For which reaſon they will never allow, that a child is under any obligation to his father for begetting him, or to his mother for bringing him into the world, which, conſidering the miſeries of human life, was neither a benefit in itſelf, nor intended ſo by his parents, whoſe thoughts in their love encounters were otherwiſe employed. Upon theſe, and the like reaſonings, their opinion is, that parents are the laſt of all others to be truſted with the education of their own children; and therefore they have in every town public nurſeries, where all parents, except cottagers and labourers, are obliged to ſend their infants of both ſexes, to be reared and educated when

when they come to the age of twenty moons, at which time they are ſuppoſed to have ſome rudiments of docility. Theſe ſchools are of ſeveral kinds, ſuited to different qualities, and to both ſexes. They have certain profeſſors, well ſkilled in preparing children for ſuch a condition of life as befits the rank of their parents, and their own capacities as well as inclinations. I ſhall firſt ſay ſomething of the male nurſeries, and then of the female.

The nurſeries for males of nobler or eminent birth, are provided with grave and learned profeſſors, and their ſeveral deputies. The cloaths and food of the children are plain and ſimple. They are bred up in the principles of honour, juſtice, courage, modeſty, clemency, religion, and love of their country; they are always employed in ſome buſineſs, except in the times of eating and ſleeping, which are very ſhort, and two hours for diverſions conſiſting of bodily exerciſes. They are dreſſed by men till four years of age, and then are obliged to dreſs themſelves, although their quality be ever ſo great; and the women attendants, who are aged proportionably to ours at fifty, perform only the moſt menial offices. They are never ſuffered to converſe with ſervants, but go together in ſmaller or greater numbers to take their diverſions, and always in the preſence of a profeſſor, or one of his deputies; whereby they avoid thoſe early bad impreſſions of folly and vice, to which our children are ſubject. Their parents are ſuffered to ſee them only twice

a-year; the viſit is to laſt but an hour; they are allowed to kiſs the child at meeting and parting; but a profeſſor, who always ſtands by on thoſe occaſions, will not ſuffer them to whiſper, or uſe any fondling expreſſions, or bring any preſents of toys, ſweet-meats, and the like.

The penſion from each family for the education and entertainment of a child, upon failure of due payment, is levied by the Emperor's officers.

The nurſeries for children of ordinary gentlemen, merchants, traders, and handicrafts, are managed proportionably after the ſame manner; only thoſe deſigned for trades are put out apprentices at eleven years old, whereas thoſe perſons of quality continue in their exercifes till fifteen, which anſwers to twenty-one with us: But the confinement is gradually leſſened for the laſt three years.

In the female nurſeries, the young girls of quality are educated much like the males, only they are dreſſed by orderly ſervants of their own ſex; but always in the preſence of a profeſſor or deputy, till they come to dreſs themſelves, which is at five years old. And if it be found, that theſe nurſes ever preſume to entertain the girls with frightful or fooliſh ſtories, or the common follies practiſed by chamber-maids among us, they are publicly whipped thrice about the city, impriſoned for a year, and baniſhed for life to the moſt deſolate part of the country. Thus the young ladies there are as much aſhamed of being cowards

ards and fools as the men, and deſpiſe all perſonal ornaments beyond decency and cleanlineſs: Neither did I perceive any difference in their education made by their difference of ſex, only that the exerciſes of the females were not altogether ſo robuſt; and that ſome rules were given them relating to domeſtic life, and a ſmaller compaſs of learning was enjoined them: For their maxim is, that, among people of quality, a wife ſhould be always a reaſonable and agreeable companion, becauſe ſhe cannot always be young. When the girls are twelve years old, which among them is the marriageable age, their parents or guardians take them home with great expreſſions of gratitude to the profeſſors, and ſeldom without tears of the young lady and her companions.

In the nurſeries of females of the meaner ſort, the children are inſtructed in all kinds of works proper for their ſex, and their ſeveral degrees: Thoſe intended for apprentices, are diſmiſſed at ſeven years old, the reſt are kept to eleven.

The meaner families, who have children at theſe nurſeries, are obliged, beſides their annual penſion, which is as low as poſſible, to return to the ſteward of the nurſery a ſmall monthly ſhare of their gettings, to be a portion for the child; and therefore all parents are limited in their expences by the law. For the Lilliputians think nothing can be more unjuſt, than for people, in ſubſervience to their own appetites, to bring children into the world, and leave the burthen of ſupporting them on the public. As to perſons of

quality,

quality, they give ſecurity to appropriate a certain ſum for each child, ſuitable to their condition; and theſe funds are always managed with good huſbandry, and the moſt exact juſtice.

The cottagers and labourers keep their children at home, their buſineſs being only to till and cultivate the earth, and therefore their education is of little conſequence to the public: But the old and diſeaſed among them, are ſupported by hoſpitals; for begging is a trade unknown in this empire.

And here it may perhaps divert the curious reader, to give ſome account of my domeſtics, and my manner of living in this country, during a reſidence of nine months and thirteen days. Having a head mechanically turned, and being likewiſe forced by neceſſity, I had made for myſelf a table and chair convenient enough out of the largeſt trees in the royal park. Two hundred ſempſtreſſes were employed to make me ſhirts, and linen for my bed and table, all of the ſtrongeſt and coarſeſt kind they could get; which, however, they were forced to quilt together in ſeveral folds, for the thickeſt was ſome degrees finer than lawn. Their linen is uſually three inches wide, and three feet make a piece. The ſempſtreſſes took my meaſure as I lay on the ground, one ſtanding at my neck, and another at my mid-leg, with a ſtrong cord extended, that each held by the end, while a third meaſured the length of the cord with a rule of an inch long. Then they meaſured my right thumb, and deſir-

ed

more; for by a mathematical computation,
wice round the thumb is once round the
and ſo on to the neck and the waiſt, and
help of my old ſhirt, which I diſplayed on
ound before them for a pattern, they fitted
tactly. Three hundred taylors were em-
l in the ſame manner to make me cloaths;
ney had another contrivance for taking my
re. I kneeled down, and they raiſed a
from the ground to my neck; upon this
one of them mounted, and let fall a plumb-
om my collar to the floor, which juſt an-
l the length of my coat; but my waiſt and
[meaſured myſelf. When my cloaths were
ed, which was done in my houſe (for the
t of theirs would not have been able to hold
they looked like the patch-work made by
dies in England, only that mine were all of
our.

ad three hundred cooks to dreſs my victuals,
le convenient huts built about my houſe,
: they and their families lived, and prepared
o dishes a-piece. I took up twenty waiters
hand, and placed them on the table; an
red more attended below on the ground,
with diſhes of meat, and ſome with barrels
ne, and other liquors, ſlung on their ſhoul-
all which the waiters above drew up, as I
ed, in a very ingenious manner by certain
, as we draw the bucket up a well in Eu-

A diſh of their meat was a good mouth-
and a barrel of their liquor a reaſonable
draught.

draught. Their mutton yields to ours, but their beef is excellent. I have had a firloin ſo large, that I have been forced to make three bites of it; but this is rare. My ſervants were aſtoniſhed to ſee me eat it, bones and all, as in our country we do the leg of a lark. Their geeſe and turkies I uſually eat at a mouthful, and I muſt confeſs, they far exceed ours. Of their ſmaller fowl I could take up twenty or thirty at the end of my knife.

One day his Imperial Majeſty, being informed of my way of living, deſired that himſelf and his royal conſort, with the young princes of the blood of both ſexes, might have the happineſs (as he was pleaſed to call it) of dining with me. They came accordingly; and I placed them in chairs of ſtate upon my table, juſt over againſt me, with their guards about them. Flimnap, the lord high treaſurer, attended there likewiſe with his white ſtaff; and I obſerved he often looked on me with a ſour countenance, which I would not ſeem to regard, but eat more than uſual, in honour to my dear country, as well as to fill the court with admiration. I have ſome private reaſons to believe, that this viſit from his Majeſty gave Flimnap an opportunity of doing me ill offices to his maſter. That miniſter had always been my ſecret enemy, though he outwardly careſſed me more than was uſual to the moroſeneſs of his nature. He repreſented to the Emperor the low condition of his treaſury; that he was forced to take up money at great diſ-

count;

count; the exchequer bills would not circulate under nine *per cent.* below *par*; that I had coſt his Majeſty above a million and a half of *ſprugs*, (their greateſt gold coin, about the bigneſs of a ſpangle); and, upon the whole, that it would be adviſable in the Emperor to take the firſt fair occaſion of diſmiſſing me.

I am here obliged to vindicate the reputation of an excellent lady, who was an innocent ſufferer upon my account. The treaſurer took a fancy to be jealous of his wife, from the malice of ſome evil tongues, who informed him that her Grace had taken a violent affection for my perſon; and the court-ſcandal ran for ſome time, that ſhe once came privately to my lodging. This I ſolemnly declare to be a moſt infamous falſehood, without any grounds, farther than that her Grace was pleaſed to treat me with all innocent marks of freedom and friendſhip. I own ſhe came often to my houſe, but always publicly, nor ever without three more in the coach, who were uſually her ſiſter and young daughter, and ſome particular acquaintance; but this was common to many other ladies of the court. And I ſtill appeal to my ſervants round, whether they at any time ſaw a coach at my door, without knowing what perſons were in it. On thoſe occaſions, when a ſervant had given me notice, my cuſtom was to go immediately to the door; and, after paying my reſpects, to take up the coach and two horſes very carefully in my hands (for, if there were ſix horſes, the poſtilion always unharneſſed

harneſſed four) and placed them on a table, where I had fixed a moveable rim quite round, of five inches high, to prevent accidents. And I have often had four coaches and horſes at once on my table full of company, while I ſat in my chair, leaning my face towards them; and when I was engaged with one ſet, the coachman would gently drive the others round my table. I have paſſed many an afternoon very agreeably in theſe converſations. But I defy the treaſurer, or his two informers, (I will name them, and let them make their beſt of it), Cluſtril and Drunlo, to prove that any perſon ever came to me *incognito*, except the ſecretary Reldreſal, who was ſent by expreſs command of his Imperial Majeſty, as I have before related. I ſhould not have dwelt ſo long upon this particular, if it had not been a point wherein the reputation of a great lady is ſo nearly concerned, to ſay nothing of my own, though I then had the honour to be a *Nardac*, which the treaſurer himſelf is not; for all the world knows, that he is only a *Glumglum*, a title inferior by one degree, as that of a Marquis is to a Duke in England; yet I allow he preceded me in right of his poſt. Theſe falſe informations, which I afterwards came to the knowledge of by an accident not proper to mention, made the treaſurer ſhew his lady for ſome time an ill countenance, and me a worſe; and although he was at laſt undeceived and reconciled to her, yet I loſt all credit with him, and found my intereſt decline very faſt with the Emperor himſelf, who was indeed too much governed by that favourite.

CHAP. VII.

The author being informed of a deſign to accuſe him of high-treaſon, maketh his eſcape to Blefuſcu. His reception there.

BEFORE I proceed to give an account of my leaving this kingdom, it may be proper to inform the reader, of a private intrigue which had been for two months forming againſt me.

I had been hitherto all my life a ſtranger to courts, for which I was unqualified by the meanneſs of my condition. I had indeed heard and read enough of the diſpoſitions of great princes and miniſters; but never expected to have found ſuch terrible effects of them in ſo remote a country, governed, as I thought, by very different maxims from thoſe in Europe.

When I was juſt preparing to pay my attendance on the Emperor of Blefuſcu, a conſiderable perſon at court (to whom I had been very ſerviceable, at a time when he lay under the higheſt diſpleaſure of his Imperial Majeſty) came to my houſe very privately at night in a cloſe chair, and, without ſending his name, deſired admittance: The chairmen were diſmiſſed; I put the chair, with his Lordſhip in it, into my coat-pocket; and, giving orders to a truſty ſervant to ſay I was indiſpoſed and gone to ſleep, I faſtened the door of my houſe, placed the chair on the table ac-

cording to my uſual cuſtom, and ſat down by it. After the common ſalutations were over, obſerving his Lordſhip's countenance full of concern, and enquiring into the reaſon, he deſired I would hear him with patience, in a matter that highly concerned my honour and my life. His ſpeech was to the following effect, for I took notes of it as ſoon as he left me.

You are to know, ſaid he, that ſeveral committees of council have been lately called, in the moſt private manner, on your account; and it is but two days ſince his Majeſty came to a full reſolution.

You are very ſenſible that Skyris Bolgolam (*galbet*, or high-admiral) hath been your mortal enemy almoſt ever ſince your arrival: His original reaſons I know not; but his hatred is increaſed ſince your great ſucceſs againſt Blefuſcu, by which his glory, as admiral, is much obſcured. This Lord, in conjunction with Flimnap the high-treaſurer, whoſe enmity againſt you is notorious on account of his lady, Limtoc the general, Lalcon the chamberlain, and Blamuff the grand juſticiary, have prepared articles of impeachment againſt you, for treaſon, and other capital crimes.

This preface made me ſo impatient, being conſcious of my own merits and innocence, that I was going to interrupt; when he entreated me to be ſilent, and thus proceeded.

Out of gratitude for the favours you have done me, I procured information of the whole proceedings,

:edings, and a copy of the articles; wherein ture my head for your ſervice.

les of impeachment againſt Quinbus Fleſtrin the man-mountain.

ARTICLE I.

hereas, by a ſtatute made in the reign of his rial Majeſty Calin Deffar Plume, it is enact- l'hat whoever ſhall make water within the acts of the royal palace, ſhall be liable to the and penalties of high treaſon: Notwith- ing the ſaid Quinbus Fleſtrin, in open breach e ſaid law, under colour of extinguiſhing the kindled in the apartment of his Majeſty's dear Imperial conſort, did maliciouſly, trai- ſly, and deviliſhly, by diſcharge of his urine, ut the ſaid fire kindled in the ſaid apart- , lying and being within the precincts of the royal palace, againſt the ſtatute in that caſe ded, *etc.* againſt the duty, *etc.*

ARTICLE II.

at the ſaid Quinbus Fleſtrin having brought nperial fleet of Blefuſcu into the royal port, eing afterwards commanded by his Imperial ty to ſeize all the other ſhips of the ſaid em- of Blefuſcu, and reduce that empire to a nce, to be governed by a viceroy from hence, o deſtroy and put to death not only all the *ndian exiles*, but likewiſe all the people of

that empire, who would not immediately forſake the *Big-endian* hereſy: He the ſaid Fleſtrin, like a falſe traitor againſt his moſt auſpicious, ſerene, Imperial Majeſty, did petition to be excuſed from the ſaid ſervice, upon pretence of unwillingneſs to force the conſciences, or deſtroy the liberties and lives of an innocent people *.

ARTICLE III.

That whereas certain ambaſſadors arrived from the court of Blefuſcu to ſue for peace in his Majeſty's court, he the ſaid Fleſtrin did, like a falſe traitor, aid, abet, comfort, and divert the ſaid ambaſſadors, although he knew them to be ſervants to a prince, who was lately an open enemy to his Imperial Majeſty, and in open war againſt his ſaid Majeſty.

ARTICLE IV.

That the ſaid Quinbus Fleſtrin, contrary to the duty of a faithful ſubject, is now preparing to make a voyage to the court and empire of Blefuſcu, for which he hath received only verbal licence from his Imperial Majeſty; and under colour of the ſaid licence, doth falſly and traiterouſly intend to take the ſaid voyage, and thereby

* A lawyer thinks himſelf honeſt if he does the beſt he can for his client; and a ſtateſman, if he promotes the intereſt of his country: But the Dean here inculcates an higher notion of right and wrong, and obligations to a large community. *Hawkeſ.*

by to aid, comfort, and abet the Emperor of Blefuſcu, ſo late an enemy and in open war with his Imperial Majeſty aforeſaid.

There are ſome other articles, but theſe are the moſt important, of which I have read you an abſtract.

In the ſeveral debates upon this impeachment, it muſt be confeſſed that his Majeſty gave many marks of his great lenity, often urging the ſervices you had done him, and endeavouring to extenuate your crimes. The treaſurer and admiral inſiſted, that you ſhould be put to the moſt painful and ignominious death by ſetting fire to your houſe at night, and the general was to attend with twenty thouſand men armed with poiſoned arrows to ſhoot you on the face and hands. Some of your ſervants were to have private orders to ſtrew a poiſonous juice on your ſhirts and ſheets, which would ſoon make you tear your own fleſh, and die in the utmoſt torture. The general came into the ſame opinion; ſo that for a long time there was a majority againſt you: But his Majeſty reſolving, if poſſible, to ſpare your life, at laſt brought off the chamberlain.

Upon this incident Reldreſal principal ſecretary for private affairs, who always approved himſelf your true friend, was commanded by the Emperor to deliver his opinion, which he accordingly did; and therein juſtified the good thoughts you have of him. He allowed your crimes to be great, but that ſtill there was room for mercy,

the moſt commendable virtue in a prince, and for which his Majeſty was ſo juſtly celebrated. He ſaid, the friendſhip between you and him was ſo well known to the world, that perhaps the moſt honourable board might think him partial: However, in obedience to the command he had received, he would freely offer his ſentiments. That if his Majeſty, in conſideration of your ſervices, and purſuant to his own merciful diſpoſition, would pleaſe to ſpare your life, and only give order to put out both your eyes, he humbly conceived, that by this expedient juſtice might in ſome meaſure be ſatisfied, and all the world would applaud the lenity of the Emperor, as well as the fair and generous proceedings of thoſe who have the honour to be his counſellors: That the loſs of your eyes would be no impediment to your bodily ſtrength, by which you might ſtill be uſeful to his Majeſty: That blindneſs is an addition to courage, by concealing dangers from us: That the fear you had for your eyes, was the greateſt difficulty in bringing over the enemy's fleet; and it would be ſufficient for you to ſee by the eyes of the miniſters, ſince the greateſt princes do no more.

This propoſal was received with the utmoſt diſapprobation by the whole board. Bolgolam the admiral could not preſerve his temper; but riſing up in fury, ſaid, He wondered how the ſecretary durſt preſume to give his opinion for preſerving the life of a traitor: That the ſervices you had performed were, by all true reaſons of ſtate,

the

the great aggravation of your crimes; that you, who were able to extinguiſh the fire by diſcharge of urine in her Majeſty's apartment (which he mentioned with horror) might at another time raiſe an inundation by the ſame means to drown the whole palace; and the ſame ſtrength, which enabled you to bring over the enemy's fleet, might ſerve upon the firſt diſcontent to carry it back: That he had good reaſons to think you are a *Big-endian* in your heart; and as treaſon begins in the heart, before it appears in overt-acts, ſo he accuſed you as a traitor on that account, and therefore inſiſted you ſhould be put to death.

The treaſurer was of the ſame opinion: He ſhewed to what ſtreights his Majeſty's revenue was reduced by the charge of maintaining you, which would ſoon grow inſupportable: That the ſecretary's expedient of putting out your eyes was ſo far from being a remedy againſt this evil, that it would probably increaſe it, as is manifeſt from the common practice of blinding ſome kinds of fowl, after which they fed the faſter, and grew ſooner fat: That his ſacred Majeſty and the council, who are your judges, were in their own conſciences fully convinced of your guilt, which was a ſufficient argument to condemn you to death, without the formal proofs required by the ſtrict letter of the law *.

But

* There is ſomething ſo odious in whatever is wrong, that even thoſe whom it does not ſubject to puniſhment, endeavour to colour it with an appearance of right; but the attempt is always unſucceſsful, and only betrays a conſciouſneſs of deformity,

by

But his Imperial Majeſty, fully determined againſt capital puniſhment, was graciouſly pleaſed to ſay, that ſince the council thought the loſs of your eyes too eaſy a cenſure, ſome other may be inflicted hereafter. And your friend the ſecretary, humbly deſiring to be heard again, in anſwer to what the treaſurer had objected concerning the great charge his Majeſty was at in maintaining you, ſaid, That his Excellency, who had the ſole diſpoſal of the Emperor's revenue, might eaſily provide againſt that evil, by gradually leſſening your eſtabliſhment; by which, for want of ſufficient food, you would grow weak and faint, and loſe your appetite, and conſume in a few months; neither would the ſtench of your carcaſe be then ſo dangerous, when it ſhould become more than half diminiſhed; and immediately upon your death, five or ſix thouſand of his Majeſty's ſubjects might in two or three days cut your fleſh from your bones, take it away by cart-loads, and bury it in diſtant parts to prevent infection, leaving the ſkeleton as a monument of admiration to poſterity.

Thus, by the great friendſhip of the ſecretary, the whole affair was compromiſed. It was ſtrictly enjoined, that the project of ſtarving you by degrees

by ſhewing a deſire to hide it. Thus the Lilliputian court pretended a right to diſpenſe with the ſtrict letter of the law to put Gulliver to death, though by the ſtrict letter of the law only, he could be convicted of a crime; the intention of the ſtatute not being to ſuffer the palace rather to be burnt, than piſſed upon. *Hawkeſ.*

degrees ſhould be kept a ſecret, but the ſentence of putting out your eyes was entered on the books; none diſſenting except Bolgolam the admiral, who, being a creature of the Empreſs, was perpetually inſtigated by her Majeſty to inſiſt upon your death, ſhe having borne perpetual malice againſt you, on account of that infamous and illegal method you took to extinguiſh the fire in her apartment.

In three days, your friend the ſecretary will be directed to come to your houſe, and read before you the articles of impeachment; and then to ſignify the great lenity and favour of his Majeſty and council, whereby you are only condemned to the loſs of your eyes, which his Majeſty doth not queſtion you will gratefully and humbly ſubmit to; and twenty of his Majeſty's ſurgeons will attend, in order to ſee the operation well performed, by diſcharging very ſharp-pointed arrows into the balls of your eyes, as you lie on the ground.

I leave to your prudence what meaſures you will take; and, to avoid ſuſpicion, I muſt immediately return in as private a manner as I came.

His lordſhip did ſo, and I remained alone under many doubts and perplexities of mind.

It was a cuſtom introduced by this prince and his miniſtry (very different, as I have been aſſured, from the practices of former times) that after the court had decreed any cruel execution, either to gratify the monarch's reſentment, or the malice of a favourite, the Emperor always made

made a ſpeech to his whole council, expreſſing his great lenity and tenderneſs, as qualities known and confeſſed by all the world. This ſpeech was immediately publiſhed through the kingdom: Nor did any thing terrify the people ſo much as thoſe encomiums on his Majeſty's mercy; becauſe it was obſerved, that the more theſe praiſes were enlarged and inſiſted on, the more inhuman was the puniſhment, and the ſufferer more innocent. Yet as to myſelf, I muſt confeſs, having never been deſigned for a courtier either by my birth or education, I was ſo ill a judge of things, that I could not diſcover the lenity and favour of this ſentence, but conceived it (perhaps erroneouſly) rather to be rigorous than gentle. I ſometimes thought of ſtanding my trial; for although I could not deny the facts alledged in the ſeveral articles, yet I hoped they would admit of ſome extenuation. But having in my life peruſed many ſtate-trials, which I ever obſerved to terminate as the judges thought fit to direct, I durſt not rely on ſo dangerous a deciſion, in ſo critical a juncture, and againſt ſuch powerful enemies. Once I was ſtrongly bent upon reſiſtance; for, while I had liberty, the whole ſtrength of that empire could hardly ſubdue me, and I might eaſily with ſtones pelt the metropolis to pieces; but I ſoon rejected that project with horror, by remembering the oath I had made to the Emperor, the favours I received from him, and the high title of *Nardac* he conferred upon me. Neither had I ſo ſoon learned the gratitude of courtiers,

courtiers, to perſuade myſelf, that his Majeſty's preſent ſeverities acquitted me of all paſt obligations.

At laſt I fixed upon a reſolution, for which it is probable I may incur ſome cenſure, and not unjuſtly; for I confeſs I owe the preſerving mine eyes, and conſequently my liberty, to my own great raſhneſs, and want of experience; becauſe, if I had then known the nature of princes and miniſters, which I have ſince obſerved in many other courts, and their methods of treating criminals leſs obnoxious than myſelf, I ſhould with great alacrity and readineſs have ſubmitted to ſo eaſy a puniſhment. But hurried on by the precipitancy of youth, and having his Imperial Majeſty's licence to pay my attendance upon the Emperor of Blefuſcu, I took this opportunity, before the three days were elapſed, to ſend a letter to my friend the ſecretary, ſignifying my reſolution of ſetting out that morning for Blefuſcu, purſuant to the leave I had got; and, without waiting for an anſwer, I went to that ſide of the iſland where our fleet lay. I ſeized a large man of war, tied a cable to the prow, and, lifting up the anchors, I ſtript myſelf, put my cloaths (together with my coverlet, which I carried under my arm) into the veſſel, and drawing it after me, between wading and ſwimming, arrived at the royal port of Blefuſcu, where the people had long expected me: They lent me two guides to direct me to the capital city, which is of the ſame name. I held them

in my hands, till I came within two hundred yards of the gate, and desired them to signify my arrival to one of the secretaries, and let him know, I there waited his Majesty's command. I had an answer in about an hour, that his Majesty, attended by the royal family and great officers of the court, was coming out to receive me. I advanced a hundred yards. The Emperor and his train alighted from their horses, the Empress and ladies from their coaches, and I did not perceive they were in any fright or concern. I lay on the ground to kiss his Majesty's and Empress's hand. I told his Majesty that I was come according to my promise, and with the licence of the Emperor my master, to have the honour of seeing so mighty a monarch, and to offer him any service in my power consistent with my duty to my own prince; not mentioning a word of my disgrace, because I had hitherto no regular information of it, and might suppose myself wholly ignorant of any such design; neither could I reasonably conceive that the Emperor would discover the secret, while I was out of his power; wherein however it soon appeared I was deceived.

I shall not trouble the reader with the particular account of my reception at this court, which was suitable to the generosity of so great a prince; nor of the difficulties I was in for want of a house and bed, being forced to lie on the ground, wrapt up in my coverlet.

CHAP. VIII.

The author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuſcu; and, after ſome difficulties, returns ſafe to his native country.

THREE days after my arrival, walking out of curioſity to the north-eaſt coaſt of the iſland, I obſerved about half a league off, in the ſea, ſomewhat that looked like a boat overturned. I pulled off my ſhoes and ſtockings, and wading two or three hundred yards, I found the object to approach nearer by force of the tide; and then plainly ſaw it to be a real boat, which I ſuppoſed might by ſome tempeſt have been driven from a ſhip: Whereupon I returned immediately towards the city, and deſired his Imperial Majeſty to lend me twenty of the talleſt veſſels he had left after the loſs of his fleet, and three thouſand ſeamen, under the command of his vice-admiral. This fleet ſailed round, while I went back the ſhorteſt way to the coaſt, where I firſt diſcovered the boat; I found the tide had driven it ſtill nearer. The ſeamen were all provided with cordage, which I had before-hand twiſted to a ſufficient ſtrength. When the ſhips came up, I ſtript myſelf, and waded till I came within a hundred yards of the boat, after which I was forced to ſwim till I got up to it. The

ſeamen threw me the end of the cord, which I faſtened to a hole in the fore-part of the boat, and the other end to a man of war: But I found all my labour to little purpoſe; for, being out of my depth, I was not able to work. In this neceſſity, I was forced to ſwim behind, and puſh the boat forwards as often as I could, with one of my hands: And the tide favouring me, I advanced ſo far, that I could juſt hold up my chin and feel the ground. I reſted two or three minutes, and then gave the boat another ſhove, and ſo on till the ſea was no higher than my arm-pits. And now, the moſt laborious part being over, I took out my other cables, which were ſtowed in one of the ſhips, and faſtened them firſt to the boat, and then to nine of the veſſels which attended me. The wind being favourable, the ſeamen towed, and I ſhoved, till we arrived within forty yards of the ſhore; and waiting till the tide was out, I got dry to the boat; and, by the aſſiſtance of two thouſand men, with ropes and engines, I made a ſhift to turn it on its bottom, and found it was but little damaged.

I ſhall not trouble the reader with the difficulties I was under by the help of certain paddles, which coſt me ten days making, to get my boat to the royal port of Blefuſcu, where a mighty concourſe of people appeared upon my arrival, full of wonder at the ſight of ſo prodigious a veſſel. I told the Emperor, that my good fortune had thrown this boat in my way to carry me to ſome place, from whence I might

return

return into my native country, and begged his Majeſty's orders for getting materials to fit it up, together with his licence to depart, which, after ſome kind expoſtulations, he was pleaſed to grant.

I did very much wonder, in all this time, not to have heard of any expreſs relating to me from our Emperor to the court of Blefuſcu. But I was afterwards given privately to underſtand, that his imperial Majeſty, never imagining I had the leaſt notice of his deſigns, believed I was only gone to Blefuſcu in performance of my promiſe, according to the licence he had given me, which was well known at our court, and would return in a few days when the ceremony was ended. But he was at laſt in pain at my long abſence; and, after conſulting with the treaſurer and the reſt of that cabal, a perſon of quality was diſpatched with a copy of the articles againſt me. This envoy had inſtructions to repreſent to the monarch of Blefuſcu, the great lenity of his maſter, who was content to puniſh me no farther than with the loſs of mine eyes; that I had fled from juſtice, and, if I did not return in two hours, I ſhould be deprived of my title of *Nardac*, and declared a traitor. The envoy further added, that, in order to maintain the peace and amity between both empires, his maſter expected, that his brother of Blefuſcu would give orders to have me ſent back to Lilliput, bound hand and foot, to be puniſhed as a traitor.

The Emperor of Blefuſcu, having taken three days to conſult, returned an anſwer conſiſting of many civilities and excuſes. He ſaid, That as for ſending me bound, his brother knew it was impoſſible; that although I had deprived him of his fleet, yet he owed great obligations to me, for many good offices I had done him in making the peace: That, however, both their Majeſties would ſoon be made eaſy; for I had found a prodigious veſſel on the ſhore, able to carry me on the ſea, which he had given orders to fit up with my own aſſiſtance and direction; and he hoped, in a few weeks, both empires would be freed from ſo unſupportable an incumbrance.

With this anſwer the envoy returned to Lilliput, and the monarch of Blefuſcu related to me all that had paſſed; offering me at the ſame time (but under the ſtricteſt confidence) his gracious protection, if I would continue in his ſervice; wherein although I believed him ſincere, yet I reſolved never more to put any confidence in princes or miniſters, where I could poſſibly avoid it; and therefore, with all due acknowledgements for his favourable intentions, I humbly begged to be excuſed. I told him, that ſince fortune, whether good or evil, had thrown a veſſel in my way, I was reſolved to venture myſelf in the ocean, rather than be an occaſion of difference between two ſuch mighty monarchs. Neither did I find the Emperor at all diſpleaſed; and I diſcovered, by a certain accident, that he was very glad of my reſolution, and ſo were *moſt of* his miniſters.

These

Theſe conſiderations moved me to haſten my departure ſomewhat ſooner than I intended; to which the court, impatient to have me gone, very readily contributed. Five hundred workmen were employed to make two ſails to my boat, according to my directions, by quilting thirteen fold of their ſtrongeſt linen together. I was at the pains of making ropes and cables, by twiſting ten, twenty, or thirty of the thickeſt and ſtrongeſt of theirs. A great ſtone that I happened to find, after a long ſearch by the ſea-ſhore, ſerved me for an anchor. I had the tallow of three hundred cows for greaſing my boat, and other uſes. I was at incredible pains in cutting down ſome of the largeſt timber trees for oars and maſts, wherein I was however much aſſiſted by his Majeſty's ſhip carpenters, who helped me in ſmoothing them after I had done the rough work.

In about a month, when all was prepared, I ſent to receive his Majeſty's commands, and to take my leave. The Emperor and royal family came out of the palace; I lay down on my face to kiſs his hand, which he very graciouſly gave me; ſo did the Empreſs, and young princes of the blood. His Majeſty preſented me with fifty purſes of two hundred *ſprugs* a piece, together with his picture at full length, which I put immediately into one of my gloves to keep it from being hurt. The ceremonies at my departure were too many to trouble the reader with at this time.

I ſtored the boat with the carcaſes of an hundred oxen, and three hundred ſheep, with bread and drink proportionable, and as much meat ready dreſſed as four hundred cooks could provide. I took with me ſix cows and two bulls alive, with as many ewes and rams, intending to carry them into my own country, and propagate the breed. And to feed them on board, I had a good bundle of hay, and a bag of corn. I would gladly have taken a dozen of the natives, but this was a thing the Emperor would by no means permit; and, beſides a diligent ſearch into my pockets, his Majeſty engaged my honour, not to carry away any of his ſubjects, although with their own conſent and deſire.

Having thus prepared all things as well as I was able, I ſet ſail on the 24th day of September 1701, at ſix in the morning; and when I had gone about four leagues to the northward, the wind being at ſouth-eaſt, at ſix in the evening I deſcried a ſmall iſland about half a league to the north-weſt. I advanced forward, and caſt anchor on the lee-ſide of the iſland, which ſeemed to be uninhabited. I then took ſome refreſhment, and went to my reſt. I ſlept well, and as I conjecture at leaſt ſix hours, for I found the day broke in two hours after I awaked. It was a clear night. I eat my breakfaſt before the ſun was up; and heaving anchor, the wind being favourable, I ſteered the ſame courſe that I had done the day before, wherein I was directed by my pocket-compaſs. My intention was to reach,

reach, if poſſible, one of thoſe iſlands which I had reaſon to believe lay to the north-eaſt of Van Diemen's land. I diſcovered nothing all that day; but upon the next, about three in the afternoon, when I had by my computation made twenty-four leagues from Blefuſcu, I deſcried a ſail ſteering to the ſouth-eaſt; my courſe was due eaſt. I hailed her, but could get no anſwer; yet I found I gained upon her, for the wind ſlackened. I made all the ſail I could, and in half an hour ſhe ſpied me, then hung out her ancient, and diſcharged a gun. It is not eaſy to expreſs the joy I was in upon the unexpected hope of once more ſeeing my beloved country, and the dear pledges I left in it. The ſhip ſlackened her ſails, and I came up with her between five and ſix in the evening, September 26th; but my heart leapt within me to ſee her Engliſh colours. I put my cows and ſheep into my coat-pockets, and got on board with all my little cargo of proviſions. The veſſel was an Engliſh merchantman returning from Japan by the North and South-ſeas; the captain, Mr John Biddel of Deptford, a very civil man, and an excellent ſailor. We were now in the latitude of 30 degrees ſouth, there were about fifty men in the ſhip; and here I met an old comrade of mine, one Peter Williams, who gave me a good character to the captain. This gentleman treated me with kindneſs, and deſired I would let him know what place I came from laſt, and whither I was bound; which I did in few words, but he thought

thought I was raving, and that the dangers I had underwent had diſturbed my head; whereupon I took my black cattle and ſheep out of my pocket, which, after great aſtoniſhment, clearly convinced him of my veracity. I then ſhewed him the gold given me by the Emperor of Blefuſcu, together with his Majeſty's picture at full length, and ſome other rarities of that country. I gave him two purſes of two hundred *ſprugs* each; and promiſed, when we arrived in England, to make him a preſent of a cow and a ſheep big with young.

I ſhall not trouble the reader with a particular account of this voyage, which was very proſperous for the moſt part. We arrived in the Downs on the 13th of April 1702. I had only one misfortune, that the rats on board carried away one of my ſheep: I found her bones in a hole, picked clean from the fleſh. The reſt of my cattle I got ſafe a-ſhore, and ſent them a grazing in a bowling-green at Greenwich, where the fineneſs of the graſs made them feed very heartily, though I had always feared the contrary; neither could I poſſibly have preſerved them in ſo long a voyage, if the captain had not allowed me ſome of his beſt biſket, which rubbed to powder, and mingled with water, was their conſtant food. The ſhort time I continued in England, I made a conſiderable profit, by ſhewing my cattle to many perſons of quality, and others: And before I began my ſecond voyage, I ſold them for ſix hundred pounds.

Since

ſince my laſt return, I find the breed is conſidera-
ly increaſed; eſpecially the ſheep, which I hope
vill prove much to the advantage of the woollen
nanufacture, by the fineneſs of the fleeces.

I ſtayed but two months with my wife and
amily; for my inſatiable deſire of ſeeing foreign
ountries would ſuffer me to continue no longer.
left fifteen hundred pounds with my wife, and
ixed her in a good houſe at Redriff. My re-
naining ſtock I carried with me, part in money
nd part in goods, in hopes to improve my for-
une. My eldeſt uncle John had left me an
ſtate in land, near Epping, of about thirty
ounds a-year; and I had a long leaſe of the
Black-Bull in Fetter-Lane, which yielded me as
nuch more: So that I was not in any danger of
eaving my family upon the pariſh. My ſon
ſohnny, named ſo after his uncle, was at the
grammar-ſchool, and a towardly child. My
laughter Betty, (who is now well married, and
as children) was then at her needle-work. I
ook leave of my wife, and boy and girl, with
ears on both ſides, and went on board the Ad-
venture, a merchant-ſhip of 300 tons, bound for
Surat, Capt. John Nicholas of Liverpool com-
nander. But my account of this voyage muſt
e referred to the ſecond part of my travels.

PART

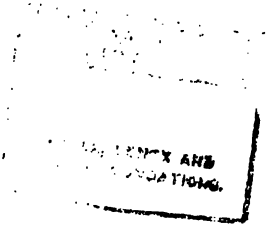
PART II.

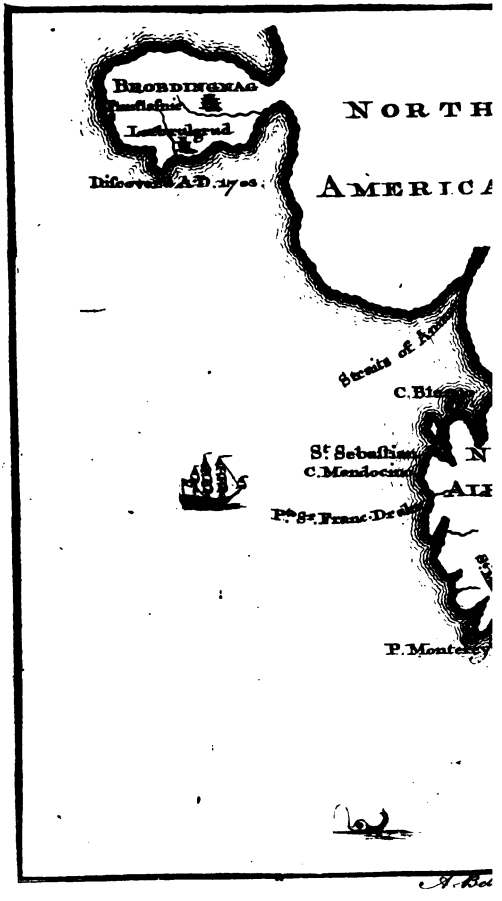
A VOYAGE TO BROBDINGNAG.

CHAP. I.

A great ſtorm deſcribed; the long-boat ſent to fetch water; the author goes with it to diſcover the country. He is left on ſhore, is ſeized by one of the natives, and carried to a farmer's houſe. His reception, with ſeveral accidents that happened there. A deſcription of the inhabitants.

HAVING been condemned by nature and fortune to an active and reſtleſs life, in two months after my return I again left my native country, and took ſhipping in the Downs on the 20th day of June 1702, in the Adventure, Capt. John Nicholas, a Corniſh man, commander, bound for Surat. We had a very proſperous gale till we arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, where we landed for freſh water: But diſcovering a leak, we unſhipped our goods, and wintered there; for, the Captain falling ſick of an ague, we could not leave the Cape till the end of March. We then ſet ſail, and had a good voyage till we paſſed the Streights of Madagaſcar; but having got northward of that iſland, and


X AND


BROBDINGNAG
Lutbrulgrud
Discovered A.D. 1703
NORTH
AMERICA
Straits of
C. Bl
St. Sebastian
C. Mendocino
Pte. Sr. Franc. Dr
P. Monte

and to about five degrees ſouth latitude, the winds, which in thoſe ſeas are obſerved to blow a conſtant equal gale between the north and weſt, from the beginning of December to the beginning of May, on the 19th of April began to blow with much greater violence, and more weſterly than uſual, continuing ſo for twenty days together; during which time, we were driven a little to the eaſt of the Molucca iſlands, and about three degrees northward of the line, as our captain found by an obſervation he took the 2d of May, at which time the wind ceaſed, and it was a perfect calm, whereat I was not a little rejoiced. But he, being a man well experienced in the navigation of thoſe ſeas, bid us all prepare againſt a ſtorm, which accordingly happened the day following; for a ſouthern wind, called the ſouthern *monſoon*, began to ſet in.

Finding it was like to overblow, we took in our ſprit-ſail, and ſtood by to hand the fore-ſail; but, making foul weather, we looked the guns were all faſt, and handled the miſſen. The ſhip lay very broad off; ſo we thought it better ſpooning before the ſea, than trying or hulling. We reeft the fore-ſail and ſet him, and hawled aft the fore-ſheet; the helm was hard a weather. The ſhip wore bravely. We belayed the fore-down-hall; but the ſail was ſplit, and we hawled down the yard, and got the ſail into the ſhip, and unbound all the things clear of it. It was a very fierce ſtorm; the ſea broke ſtrange and dangerous. We hawled off upon the lanniard

of

of the whip-ſtaff, and helped the man at the helm. We would not get down our top-maſt, but let all ſtand, becauſe ſhe ſcudded before the ſea very well; and we knew, that, the top-maſt being aloft, the ſhip was the wholeſomer, and made better way through the ſea, ſeeing we had ſea-room. When the ſtorm was over, we ſet fore-ſail and main-ſail, and brought the ſhip to. Then we ſet the miſſen, main-top-ſail, and the fore-top-ſail. Our courſe was *eaſt-north-eaſt*, the wind was at *ſouth-weſt*. We got the ſtar-board tacks aboard; we caſt off our weather-braces and lifts; we ſet in the lee-braces, and hawled forward by the weather-bowlings, and hawled them tight, and belayed them, and hawled over the miſſen-tack to windward, and kept her full and by as near as ſhe would lie.

During this ſtorm, which was followed by a ſtrong wind *weſt-ſouth-weſt*, we were carried, by my computation, about five hundred leagues to the *eaſt*; ſo that the oldeſt ſailor on board could not tell in what part of the world we were. Our proviſions held out well, our ſhip was ſtaunch, and our crew all in good health; but we lay in the utmoſt diſtreſs for water. We thought it beſt to hold on the ſame courſe, rather than turn more northerly, which might have brought us to the *north-weſt* parts of Great Tartary, and into the frozen ſea.

On the 16th day of June, 1703, a boy on the top-maſt diſcovered land. On the 17th, we came in full view of a great iſland or continent (for

(for we knew not whether) on the ſouth-ſide whereof was a ſmall neck of land jutting out into the ſea, and a creek too ſhallow to hold a ſhip of above one hundred tons. We caſt anchor within a league of this creek, and our captain ſent a dozen of his men well armed in the long-boat, with veſſels for water, if any could be found. I deſired his leave to go with them, that I might ſee the country, and make what diſcoveries I could. When we came to land, we ſaw no river or ſpring, nor any ſign of inhabitants. Our men therefore wandered on the ſhore to find out ſome freſh water near the ſea, and I walked alone about a mile on the other ſide, where I obſerved the country all barren and rocky. I now began to be weary, and ſeeing nothing to entertain my curioſity, I returned gently down towards the creek; and the ſea being full in my view, I ſaw our men already got into the boat, and rowing for life to the ſhip. I was going to hollow after them, although it had been to little purpoſe, when I obſerved a huge creature walking after them in the ſea, as faſt as he could; he waded not much deeper than his knees, and took prodigious ſtrides: But our men had the ſtart of him half a league; and the ſea thereabouts being full of ſharp-pointed rocks, the monſter was not able to overtake the boat. This I was afterwards told, for I durſt not ſtay to ſee the iſſue of the adventure; but ran as faſt as I could the way I firſt went, and then climbed up a ſteep hill, which gave me ſome proſpect of

the country. I found it fully cultivated; but that which firſt ſurpriſed me was the length of the graſs, which, in thoſe grounds that ſeemed to be kept for hay, was about twenty feet high.

I fell into a high road, for ſo I took it to be, though it ſerved to the inhabitants only as a foot-path through a field of barley. Here I walked on for ſome time, but could ſee ſo little on either ſide, it being now near harveſt, and the corn riſing at leaſt forty feet, I was an hour walking to the end of this field, which was fenced in with a hedge of at leaſt one hundred and twenty feet high, and the trees ſo lofty that I could make no computation of their altitude. There was a ſtile to paſs from this field into the next. It had four ſteps, and a ſtone to croſs over when you came to the uppermoſt. It was impoſſible for me to climb this ſtile, becauſe every ſtep was ſix feet high, and the upper ſtone above twenty. I was endeavouring to find ſome gap in the hedge, when I diſcovered one of the inhabitants in the next field advancing towards the ſtile, of the ſame ſize with him whom I ſaw in the ſea purſuing our boat. He appeared as tall as an ordinary ſpire-ſteeple, and took about ten yards at every ſtride, as near as I could gueſs. I was ſtruck with the utmoſt fear and aſtoniſhment, and ran to hide myſelf in the corn, from whence I ſaw him at the top of the ſtile looking back into the next field on the right hand, and heard him call in a voice many degrees louder than a ſpeaking trumpet; but the noiſe was ſo high

high in the air, that at firſt I certainly thought it was thunder. Whereupon ſeven monſters, like himſelf, came towards him with reaping hooks in their hands, each hook about the largeneſs of ſix ſcythes. Theſe people were not ſo well clad as the firſt, whoſe ſervants or labourrers they ſeemed to be: For, upon ſome words he ſpoke, they went to reap the corn in the field where I lay. I kept from them at as great a diſtance as I could, but was forced to move with extreme difficulty, for the ſtalks of the corn were ſometimes not above a foot diſtant, ſo that I could hardly ſqueeze my body betwixt them. However I made a ſhift to go forward, till I came to a part of the field where the corn had been laid by the rain and wind. Here it was impoſſible for me to advance a ſtep; for the ſtalks were ſo interwoven, that I could not creep through, and the beards of the fallen ears ſo ſtrong and pointed, that they pierced through my cloaths into my fleſh. At the ſame time I heard the reapers not above an hundred yards behind me. Being quite diſpirited with toil, and wholly overcome by grief and deſpair, I lay down between two ridges, and heartily wiſhed I might there end my days. I bemoaned my deſolate widow, and fatherleſs children. I lamented my own folly and wilfulneſs, in attempting a ſecond voyage againſt the advice of all my friends and relations. In this terrible agitation of mind, I could not forbear thinking of Lilliput, whoſe inhabitants looked upon me as the greateſt

prodigy that ever appeared in the world: W
I was able to draw an imperial fleet in my h
and perform thoſe other actions which wil
recorded for ever in the chronicles of that
pire, while poſterity ſhall hardly believe th
although atteſted by millions. I reflected
a mortification it muſt prove to me, to appea
inconſiderable in this nation, as one ſingle I
putian would be among us. But this I conce
was to be the leaſt of my misfortunes: For
human creatures are obſerved to be more fa
and cruel in proportion to their bulk, w
could I expect but to be a morſel in the mc
of the firſt among theſe enormous barbari
that ſhould happen to ſeize me? Undoubt
philoſophers are in the right when they tell
that nothing is great or little otherwiſe than
compariſon. It might have pleaſed fortune
have let the Lilliputians find ſome nation, wh
the people were as diminutive with reſpect
them, as they were to me. And who kn
but that even this prodigious race of mor
might be equally overmatched in ſome diſtant
of the world, whereof we have yet no diſcove

Scared and confounded as I was, I could
forbear going on with theſe reflections, when
of the reapers, approaching within ten yard
the ridge where I lay, made me apprehend t
with the next ſtep I ſhould be ſquaſhed to de
under his foot, or cut in two with his reapi
hook. And therefore, when he was again ab
to move, I ſcreamed as loud as fear could m

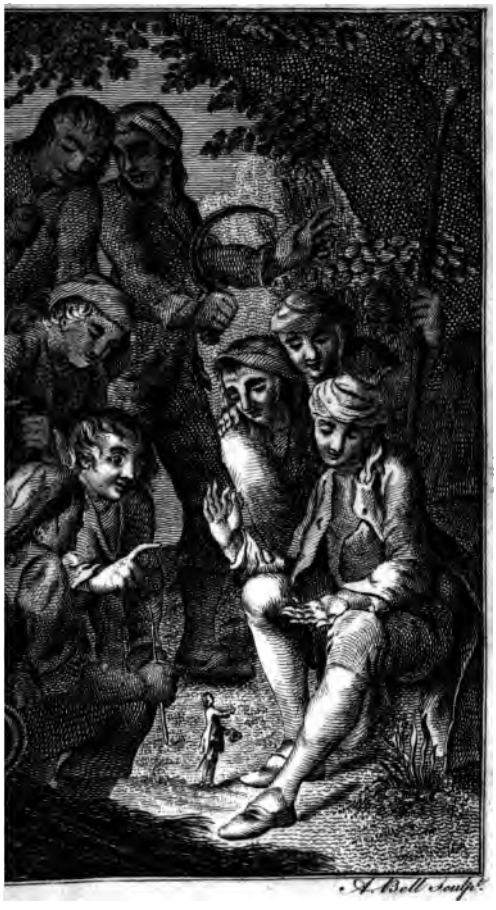
me. Whereupon the huge creature trode ſhort, and, looking round about under him for ſome time, at laſt eſpied me as I lay on the ground. He conſidered a while with the caution of one who endeavours to lay hold on a ſmall dangerous animal, in ſuch a manner that it ſhall not be able either to ſcratch or to bite him, as I myſelf have ſometimes done with a weaſel in England. At length he ventured to take me up behind by the middle between his fore-finger and thumb, and brought me within three yards of his eyes, that he might behold my ſhape more perfectly. I gueſſed his meaning, and my good fortune gave me ſo much preſence of mind, that I reſolved not to ſtruggle in the leaſt, as he held me in the air above ſixty feet from the ground, although he grievouſly pinched my ſides, for fear I ſhould ſlip through his fingers. All I ventured was to raiſe mine eyes towards the ſun, and place my hands together in a ſupplicating poſture, and to ſpeak ſome words in an humble melancholy tone, ſuitable to the condition I then was in. For I apprehended every moment that he would daſh me againſt the ground, as we uſually do any little hateful animal, which we have a mind to deſtroy *. But my good ſtar would have it, that

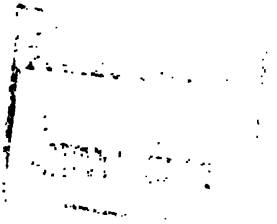
* Our inattention to the felicity of ſenſitive beings, merely becauſe they are ſmall, is here forcibly reproved: Many have wantonly cruſhed an inſect, who would ſhudder at cutting the throat of a dog; but it ſhould always be remembered, that the leaſt of theſe

In mortal ſuffrance feels a pang as great
As when a giant dies. Hamlet.

he appeared pleaſed with my voice and geſtures, and began to look upon me as a curioſity, much wondering to hear me pronounce articulate words, although he could not underſtand them. In the mean time I was not able to forbear groaning and ſhedding tears, and turning my head towards my ſides; letting him know, as well as I could, how cruelly I was hurt by the preſſure of his thumb and finger. He ſeemed to apprehend my meaning; for, lifting up the lappet of his coat, he put me gently into it, and immediately ran along with me to his maſter, who was a ſubſtantial farmer, and the ſame perſon I had firſt ſeen in the field.

The farmer having (as I ſuppoſe by their talk) received ſuch an account of me as his ſervant could give him, took a piece of a ſmall ſtraw, about the ſize of a walking-ſtaff, and therewith lifted up the lappets of my coat; which it ſeems he thought to be ſome kind of covering that nature had given me. He blew my hairs aſide, to take a better view of my face. He called his hinds about him, and aſked them (as I afterwards learned) whether they had ever ſeen in the fields any little creature that reſembled me: He then placed me ſoftly on the ground upon all four, but I got immediately up, and walked ſlowly backwards and forwards, to let thoſe people ſee I had no intent to run away. They all ſat down in a circle about me, the better to obſerve my motions. I pulled off my hat, and made a low bow towards the farmer. I fell on my knees, and lifted


A. Bell Sculpt.



lifted up my hands and eyes, and ſpoke ſeveral words as loud as I could: I took a purſe of gold out of my pocket, and humbly preſented it to him. He received it on the palm of his hand, then applied it cloſe to his eye to ſee what it was, and afterwards turned it ſeveral times with the point of a pin (which he took out of his ſleeve) but could make nothing of it. Whereupon I made a ſign, that he ſhould place his hand on the ground. I then took the purſe, and opening it, poured all the gold into his palm. There were ſix Spaniſh pieces of four piſtoles each, beſides twenty or thirty ſmaller coins. I ſaw him wet the tip of his little finger upon his tongue, and take up one of my largeſt pieces, and then another; but he ſeemed to be wholly ignorant what they were. He made me a ſign to put them again into my purſe, and the purſe again into my pocket, which, after offering it to him for ſeveral times, I thought it beſt to do.

The farmer by this time was convinced I muſt be a rational creature. He ſpoke often to me, but the ſound of his voice pierced my ears like that of a water-mill, yet his words were articulate enough. I anſwered as loud as I could in ſeveral languages, and he often laid his ear within two yards of me; but all in vain, for we were wholly unintelligible to each other. He then ſent his ſervants to their work, and, taking his handkerchief out of his pocket, he doubled and ſpread it on his left hand, which he placed flat on the ground with the palm upwards, making me a ſign

to ſtep into it, as I could eaſily do, for it was not above a foot in thickneſs. I thought it my part to obey, and, for fear of falling, laid myſelf at full length upon the handkerchief, with the remainder of which he lapped me up to the head for farther ſecurity, and in this manner carried me home to his houſe. There he called his wife, and ſhewed me to her; but ſhe ſcreamed and ran back, as women in England do at the ſight of a toad or a ſpider. However, while ſhe had a while ſeen my behaviour, and how well I obſerved the ſigns her huſband made, ſhe was ſoon reconciled, and by degrees grew extremely tender of me.

It was about twelve at noon, and a ſervant brought in dinner. It was only one ſubſtantial diſh of meat (fit for the plain condition of an huſbandman) in a diſh of about four and twenty feet diameter. The company were the farmer and his wife, three children, and an old grandmother: When they were ſat down, the farmer placed me at ſome diſtance from him on the table, which was thirty feet high from the floor. I was in a terrible fright, and kept as far as I could from the edge for fear of falling. The wife minced a bit of meat, then crumbled ſome bread on a trencher, and placed it before me. I made her a low bow, took out my knife and fork, and fell to eat, which gave them exceeding delight. The miſtreſs ſent her maid for a ſmall dram-cup, which held about two gallons, and filled it with drink; I took up the veſſel with much difficulty in

in both hands, and in a moſt reſpectful manner drank to her Ladyſhip's health, expreſſing the words as loud as I could in Engliſh, which made the company laugh ſo heartily, that I was almoſt deafened with the noiſe. This liquor taſted like a ſmall cyder, and was not unpleaſant. Then the maſter made me a ſign to come to his trencher-ſide; but as I walked on the table, being in great ſurprize all the time, as the indulgent reader will eaſily conceive and excuſe, I happened to ſtumble againſt a cruſt, and fell flat on my face, but received no hurt. I got up immediately, and obſerving the good people to be in much concern, I took my hat (which I held under my arm out of good manners) and, waving it over my head, made three huzzas, to ſhew I had got no miſchief by my fall. But advancing forwards towards my maſter (as I ſhall henceforth call him) his youngeſt ſon who ſat next him, an arch boy of about ten years old, took me up by the legs, and held me ſo high in the air, that I trembled every limb; but his father ſnatched me from him, and at the ſame time gave him ſuch a box on the left ear, as would have felled an European troop of horſe to the earth, ordering him to be taken from the table: But being afraid the boy might owe me a ſpight, and well remembering how miſchievous all children among us naturally are to ſparrows, rabbits, young kittens, and puppy-dogs, I fell on my knees, and, pointing to the boy, made my maſter to underſtand, as well as I could, that I deſired his ſon might be pardoned.

The

The father complied, and the lad took his ſeat again; whereupon I went to him and kiſſed his hand, which my maſter took, and made him ſtroak me gently with it.

In the midſt of dinner, my miſtreſs's favourite cat leapt into her lap. I heard a noiſe behind me like that of a dozen ſtocking-weavers at work; and, turning my head, I found it proceeded from the purring of that animal, who ſeemed to be three times larger than an ox, as I computed by the view of her head, and one of her paws, while her miſtreſs was feeding and ſtroaking her. The fierceneſs of this creature's countenance altogether diſcompoſed me; though I ſtood at the further end of the table, above fifty feet off; and altho' my miſtreſs held her faſt, for fear ſhe might give a ſpring, and ſeize me in her talons. But it happened there was no danger; for the cat took not the leaſt notice of me, when my maſter placed me within three yards of her. And as I have been always told, and found true by experience in my travels, that flying or diſcovering fear before a fierce animal is a certain way to make it purſue or attack you, ſo I reſolved in this dangerous juncture to ſhew no manner of concern. I walked with intrepidity five or ſix times before the very head of the cat, and came within half a yard of her; whereupon ſhe drew herſelf back, as if ſhe were more afraid of me: I had leſs apprehenſion concerning the dogs, whereof three or four came into the room, as it is uſual in farmers houſes; one of which was a maſtif equal in bulk

ılk to four elephants, and a greyhound ſome-
hat taller than the maſtiff, but not ſo large.
When dinner was almoſt done, the nurſe came
with a child of a year old in her arms, who
ımediately ſpied me, and began a ſquall, that
ɔu might have heard from London-bridge to
helſea, after the uſual oratory of infants, to get
e for a play-thing. The mother out of pure
dulgence took me up, and put me towards the
ıild, who preſently ſeized me by the middle, and
ɔt my head into his mouth, where I roared ſo
ud that the urchin was frighted, and let me
rop, and I ſhould infallibly have broke my neck,
the mother had not held her apron under me.
he nurſe, to quiet her babe, made uſe of a rattle,
hich was a kind of hollow veſſel filled with great
ones, and faſtened by a cable to the child's
aiſt: But all in vain, ſo that ſhe was forced to
ɔply the laſt remedy by giving it ſuck. I muſt
ɔnfeſs no object ever diſguſted me ſo much as
ıe ſight of her monſtrous breaſt, which I cannot
ll what to compare with, ſo as to give the cu-
ous reader an idea of its bulk, ſhape, and co-
ur. It ſtood prominent ſix feet, and could
ot be leſs than ſixteen in circumference. The
ipple was about half the bigneſs of my head,
ıd the hue both of that and the dug ſo varified
ith ſpots, pimples, and freckles, that nothing
ɔuld appear more nauſeous: For I had a near
ght of her, ſhe ſitting down the more conveni-
ntly to give ſuck, and I ſtanding on the table.
his made me reflect upon the fair ſkins of our

Engliſh

Engliſh ladies, who appear ſo beautiful to us, only becauſe they are of our own ſize, and their defects not to be ſeen but through a magnifying-glaſs, where we find by experiment, that the ſmootheſt and whiteſt ſkins look rough and coarſe, and ill-coloured.

I remember, when I was at Lilliput, the complexions of thoſe diminutive people appeared to me the faireſt in the world; and talking upon this ſubject with a perſon of learning there, who was an intimate friend of mine, he ſaid that my face appeared much fairer and ſmoother when he looked on me from the ground, than it did upon a nearer view when I took him up in my hand and brought him cloſe, which he confeſſed was at firſt a very ſhocking ſight. He ſaid he could diſcover great holes in my ſkin; that the ſtumps of my beard were ten times ſtronger than the briſtles of a boar, and my complexion made up of ſeveral colours altogether diſagreeable: Although I muſt beg leave to ſay for myſelf, that I am as fair as moſt of my ſex and country, and very little ſun-burnt by all my travels. On the other ſide, diſcourſing of the ladies in that Emperor's court, he uſed to tell me, one had freckles, another too wide a mouth, a third too large a noſe, nothing of which I was able to diſtinguiſh. I confeſs this reflection was obvious enough; which however I could not forbear, leſt the reader might think thoſe vaſt creatures were actually deformed: For I muſt do them juſtice to ſay, they are a comely race of people; and particularly the

features of my maſter's countenance; although he were but a farmer, when I beheld him from the height of ſixty feet, appeared very well proportioned.

When dinner was done, my maſter went out to his labourers, and, as I could diſcover by his voice and geſture, gave his wife a ſtrict charge to take care of me. I was very much tired, and diſpoſed to ſleep, which my miſtreſs perceiving, ſhe put me on her own bed, and covered me with a clean white handkerchief, but larger and coarſer than the main-ſail of a man of war.

I ſlept about two hours, and dreamed I was at home with my wife and children, which aggravated my ſorrows when I awaked, and found myſelf alone in a vaſt room, between two and three hundred feet wide, and above two hundred high, lying in a bed twenty yards wide. My miſtreſs was gone about her houſhold affairs, and had locked me in. The bed was eight yards from the floor. Some natural neceſſities required me to get down; I durſt not preſume to call, and, if I had, it would have been in vain with ſuch a voice as mine, at ſo great a diſtance as from the room where I lay, to the kitchen where the family kept. While I was under theſe circumſtances, two rats crept up the curtains, and ran ſmelling backwards and forwards on the bed. One of them came up almoſt to my face, whereupon I roſe in a fright, and drew out my hanger to defend myſelf. Theſe horrible animals had the boldneſs to attack me on both ſides, and

one of them held his fore-feet at my collar; but I had the good fortune to rip up his belly, before he could do me any miſchief. He fell down at my feet, and the other ſeeing the fate of his comrade made his eſcape, but not without one good wound on the back, which I gave him as he fled, and made the blood run trickling from him. After this exploit I walked gently to and fro on the bed to recover my breath, and loſs of ſpirits. Theſe creatures were of the ſize of a large maſtiff, but infinitely more nimble and fierce; ſo that, if I had taken off my belt before I went to ſleep, I muſt have infallibly been torn to pieces and devoured. I meaſured the tail of the dead rat, and found it to be two yards long, wanting an inch; but it went againſt my ſtomach to drag the carcaſe off the bed, where it lay ſtill bleeding: I obſerved it had yet ſome life, but, with a ſtrong flaſh croſs the neck, I thoroughly diſpatched it.

Soon after, my miſtreſs came into the room, who ſeeing me all bloody, ran and took me up in her hand. I pointed to the dead rat, ſmiling and making other ſigns to ſhew I was not hurt, whereat ſhe was extremely rejoiced, calling the maid to take up the dead rat with a pair of tongs, and throw it out of the window. Then ſhe ſet me on a table, where I ſhewed her my hanger all bloody, and, wiping it on the lappet of my coat, returned it to the ſcabbard. I was preſſed to do more than one thing, which another could not do for me, and therefore endeavoured to

make

make my miſtreſs underſtand that I deſired to be ſet down on the floor; which after ſhe had done, my baſhfulneſs would not ſuffer me to expreſs myſelf farther, than in pointing to the door, and bowing ſeveral times. The good woman with much difficulty, at laſt perceived what I would be at, and taking me up again in her hand, walked into the garden, where ſhe ſet me down. I went on one ſide about two hundred yards, and beckoning to her not to look or to follow me, I hid myſelf between two leaves of ſorrel, and there diſcharged the neceſſities of nature.

I hope the gentle reader will excuſe me for dwelling on theſe and the like particulars, which, however inſignificant they may appear to grovelling vulgar minds, yet will certainly help a philoſopher to enlarge his thoughts and imagination, and apply them to the benefit of public as well as private life, which was my ſole deſign in preſenting this and other accounts of my travels to the world; wherein I have been chiefly ſtudious of truth, without affecting any ornaments of learning or of ſtyle. But the whole ſcene of this voyage made ſo ſtrong an impreſſion on my mind, and is ſo deeply fixed in my memory, that in committing it to paper I did not omit one material circumſtance: However, upon a ſtrict review, I blotted out ſeveral paſſages of leſs moment which were in my firſt copy, for fear of being cenſured as tedious and trifling, whereof travellers are often, perhaps not without juſtice, accuſed.

CHAP. II.

A deſcription of the farmer's daughter. The author carried to a market-town, and then to the metropolis. The particulars of his journey.

MY miſtreſs had a daughter of nine years old, a child of towardly parts for her age, very dextrous at her needle, and ſkilful in dreſſing her baby. Her mother and ſhe contrived to fit up the baby's cradle for me againſt night: The cradle was put into a ſmall drawer of a cabinet, and the drawer placed upon a hanging ſhelf for fear of the rats. This was my bed all the time I ſtayed with thoſe people, though made more convenient by degrees, as I began to learn their language, and make my wants known. This young girl was ſo handy, that, after I had once or twice pulled off my cloaths before her, ſhe was able to dreſs and undreſs me, though I never gave her that trouble, when ſhe would let me do either myſelf. She made me ſeven ſhirts, and ſome other linen, of as fine cloth as could be got, which indeed was coarſer than ſackcloth; and theſe ſhe conſtantly waſhed for me with her own hands. She was likewiſe my ſchool-miſtreſs, to teach me the language: When I pointed to any thing, ſhe told me the name of it in her own tongue, ſo that in a few days I was able to call for whatever

whatever I had a mind to. She was very good-natured, and not above forty feet high, being little for her age. She gave me the name of Grildrig, which the family took up, and afterwards the whole kingdom. The word imports what the Latins call *nanunculus*. The Italians *homunceletino*, and the Engliſh *mannikin*. To her I chiefly owe my preſervation in that country: We never parted while I was there; I called her my Glumdalclitch, or little nurſe; and ſhould be guilty of great ingratitude, if I omitted this honourable mention of her care and affection towards me, which I heartily wiſh it lay in my power to requite as ſhe deſerves, inſtead of being the innocent, but unhappy inſtrument of her diſgrace, as I have too much reaſon to fear.

It now began to be known and talked of in the neighbourhood, that my maſter had found a ſtrange animal in the field, about the bigneſs of a *ſplacknuck*, but exactly ſhaped in every part like a human creature; which it likewiſe imitated in all its actions; ſeemed to ſpeak in a little language of its own, had already learned ſeveral words of theirs, went erect upon two legs, was tame and gentle, would come when it was called, do whatever it was bid, had the fineſt limbs in the world, and a complexion fairer than a nobleman's daughter of three years old. Another farmer, who lived hard by, and was a particular friend of my maſter, came on a viſit on purpoſe to enquire into the truth of this ſtory. I was immediately produced, and placed

upon a table, where I walked as I was commanded, drew my hanger, put it up again, made my reverence to my maſter's gueſt, aſked him in his own language how he did, and told him he was welcome, juſt as my little nurſe had inſtructed me. This man, who was old and dim-ſighted, put on his ſpectacles to behold me better, at which I could not forbear laughing very heartily, for his eyes appeared like the full moon ſhining into a chamber at two windows. Our people, who diſcovered the cauſe of my mirth, bore me company in laughing, at which the old fellow was fool enough to be angry and out of countenance. He had the character of a great miſer, and, to my misfortune, he well deſerved it by the curſed advice he gave my maſter, to ſhew me as a ſight upon a market day in the next town, which was half an hour's riding, about two and twenty miles from our houſe. I gueſſed there was ſome miſchief contriving, when I obſerved my maſter and his friend whiſpering long together, ſometimes pointing at me; and my fears made me fancy that I overheard and underſtood ſome of their words. But the next morning Glumdalcliteh, my little nurſe, told me the whole matter, which ſhe had cunningly picked out from her mother. The poor girl laid me on her boſom, and fell a weeping with ſhame and grief. She apprehended ſome miſchief would happen to me from rude vulgar folks, who might ſqueeze me to death, or break one of my limbs by taking me in their hands. She had alſo obſerved how modeſt

modeſt I was in my nature, how nicely I regarded my honour, and what an indignity I ſhould conceive it to be expoſed for money as a public ſpectacle to the meaneſt of the people. She ſaid, her *papa* and *mamma* had promiſed that Grildrig ſhould be hers, but now ſhe found they meant to ſerve her as they did laſt year, when they pretended to give her a lamb, and yet, as ſoon as it was fat, ſold it to a butcher. For my own part, I may truly affirm, that I was leſs concerned than my nurſe. I had a ſtrong hope, which never left me, that I ſhould one day recover my liberty; and as to the ignominy of being carried about for a monſter, I conſidered myſelf to be a perfect ſtranger in the country, and that ſuch a misfortune could never be charged upon me as a reproach, if ever I ſhould return to England; ſince the King of Great-Britain himſelf, in my condition, muſt have undergone the ſame diſtreſs.

My maſter, purſuant to the advice of his friend, carried me in a box the next market-day to the neighbouring town, and took along with him his little daughter, my nurſe, upon a pillion behind him. The box was cloſe on every ſide, with a little door for me to go in and out, and a few gimlet-holes to let in air. The girl had been ſo careful as to put the quilt of her baby's bed into it for me to lie down on. However I was terribly ſhaken and diſcompoſed in this journey, though it were but of half an hour. For the horſe went about forty feet at every ſtep,

and

and trotted ſo high, that the agitation was equal to the riſing and falling of a ſhip in a great ſtorm, but much more frequent: Our journey was ſomewhat farther than from London to St. Alban's. My maſter alighted at an inn which he uſed to frequent; and after conſulting a while with the inn-keeper, and making ſome neceſſary preparations, he hired the *grultrud* or crier to give notice through the town of a ſtrange creature to be ſeen at the ſign of the Green Eagle, not ſo big as a *ſplacknuck* (an animal in that country very finely ſhaped, about ſix feet long) and in every part of the body reſembling an human creature, could ſpeak ſeveral words, and perform an hundred diverting tricks.

I was placed upon a table in the largeſt room in the inn, which might be near three hundred feet ſquare. My little nurſe ſtood on a low ſtool cloſe to the table to take care of me, and direct what I ſhould do. My maſter, to avoid a croud, would ſuffer only thirty people at a time to ſee me. I walked about on the table as the girl commanded: She aſked me queſtions, as far as ſhe knew my underſtanding of the language reached, and I anſwered them as loud as I could. I turned about ſeveral times to the company, paid my humble reſpects, ſaid they were welcome, and uſed ſome other ſpeeches I had been taught. I took up a thimble filled with liquor, which Glumdalclitch had given me for a cup, and drank their health. I drew out my hanger, and flouriſhed with it after the manner of fencers in England.

My

My nurſe gave me part of a ſtraw, which I exerciſed as a pike, having learned the art in my youth. I was that day ſhewn to twelve ſetts of company, and as often forced to act over again the ſame fopperies, till I was half dead with wearineſs and vexation. For thoſe who had ſeen me made ſuch wonderful reports, that the people were ready to break down the doors to come in. My maſter, for his own intereſt, would not ſuffer any one to touch me except my nurſe; and to prevent danger, benches were ſet round the table at ſuch a diſtance as to put me out of every body's reach. However, an unlucky ſchool-boy aimed a hazel-nut directly at my head, which very narrowly miſſed me; otherwiſe, it came with ſo much violence, that it would have infallibly knocked out my brains, for it was almoſt as large as a ſmall pumpion: But I had the ſatisfaction to ſee the young rogue well beaten and turned out of the room.

My maſter gave public notice, that he would ſhew me again the next market-day, and in the mean time he prepared a more convenient vehicle for me, which he had reaſon enough to do; for I was ſo tired with my firſt journey, and with entertaining company for eight hours together, that I could hardly ſtand upon my legs, or ſpeak a word. It was at leaſt three days before I recovered my ſtrength; and that I might have no reſt at home, all the neighbouring gentlemen from an hundred miles round, hearing of my fame, came to ſee me at my maſter's own houſe.

There

There could not be fewer than thirty perſons with their wives and children (for the country is very populous); and my maſter demanded the rate of a full room whenever he ſhewed me at home, although it were only to a ſingle family: So that for ſome time I had but little eaſe every day of the week (except Wedneſday, which is their ſabbath) although I were not carried to the town.

My maſter, finding how profitable I was like to be, reſolved to carry me to the moſt conſiderable cities of the kingdom. Having therefore provided himſelf with all things neceſſary for a long journey, and ſettled his affairs at home, he took leave of his wife, and upon the 17th of Auguſt 1703, about two months after my arrival, we ſet out for the metropolis, ſituated near the middle of that empire, and about three thouſand miles diſtance from our houſe: My maſter made his daughter Glumdalclitch ride behind him. She carried me on her lap in a box tied about her waiſt. The girl had lined it on all ſides with the ſofteſt cloth ſhe could get, well quilted underneath, furniſhed it with her baby's bed, provided me with linen and other neceſſaries, and made every thing as convenient as ſhe could. We had no other company but a boy of the houſe, who rode after us with the luggage.

My maſter's deſign was to ſhew me in all the towns by the way, and to ſtep out of the road for fifty or an hundred miles, to any village, or perſon of quality's houſe, where he might expect

cuſtom-

cuſtom. We made eaſy journies of not above ſeven or eight ſcore miles a-day: For Glumdalclitch, on purpoſe to ſpare me, complained ſhe was tired with the trotting of the horſe. She often took me out of my box at my own deſire to give me air, and ſhew me the country, but always held me faſt by a leading-ſtring. We paſſed over five or ſix rivers many degrees broader and deeper than the Nile, or the Ganges; and there was hardly a rivulet ſo ſmall as the Thames at London-bridge. We were ten weeks in our journey, and I was ſhewn in eighteen large towns, beſides many villages and private families.

On the 26th day of October, we arrived at the metropolis, called in their language Lorbrulgurd, or Pride of the Univerſe. My maſter took a lodging in the principal ſtreet of the city not far from the royal palace, and put out bills in the uſual form, containing an exact deſcription of my perſon and parts. He hired a large room between three and four hundred feet wide. He provided a table ſixty feet in diameter, upon which I was to act my part, and palliſadoed it round three feet from the edge, and as many high, to prevent my falling over. I was ſhewn ten times a-day, to the wonder and ſatisfaction of all people. I could now ſpeak the language tolerably well, and perfectly underſtood every word that was ſpoken to me. Beſides, I had learned their alphabet, and could make a ſhift to explain a ſentence here and there; for Glumdalclitch had been my inſtructor while we were at home,

and

and at leiſure hours during our journey. She carried a little book in her pocket, not much larger than a Sanſon's Atlas; it was a common treatiſe for the uſe of young girls, giving a ſhort account of their religion; out of this ſhe taught me my letters, and interpreted the words.

CHAP. III.

The author ſent for to court. The Queen buys him of his maſter the farmer, and preſents him to the King. He diſputes with his Majeſty's great ſcholars. An apartment at court provided for the author. He is in high favour with the Queen. He ſtands up for the honour of his own country. His quarrels with the Queen's dwarf.

THE frequent labours I underwent every day, made in a few weeks a very conſiderable change in my health: The more my maſter got by me, the more inſatiable he grew. I had quite loſt my ſtomach, and was almoſt reduced to a ſkeleton. The farmer obſerved it, and concluding I muſt ſoon die, reſolved to make as good a hand of me as he could. While he was thus reaſoning and reſolving with himſelf, a *ſardral*, or gentleman-uſher, came from court, commanding my maſter to carry me immediately thither for the diverſion of the Queen and her ladies. Some of the latter had already been to

ee me, and reported ſtrange things of my beauty, behaviour, and good ſenſe. Her Majeſty, and thoſe who attended her, were beyond meaſure delighted with my demeanour. I fell on my knees, and begged the honour of kiſſing her imperial foot; but this gracious princeſs held out her little finger towards me (after I was ſet on a table) which I embraced in both my arms, and put the tip of it with the utmoſt reſpect to my lip. She made me ſome general queſtions about my country, and my travels, which I anſwered as diſtinctly, and in as few words as I could. She aſked, whether I would be content to live at court? I bowed down to the board of the table, and humbly anſwered, that I was my maſter's ſlave; but if I were at my own diſpoſal, I ſhould be proud to devote my life to her Majeſty's ſervice. She then aſked my maſter, whether he were willing to ſell me at a good price? He, who apprehended I could not live a month, was ready enough to part with me, and demanded a thouſand pieces of gold, which were ordered him on the ſpot, each piece being about the bigneſs of eight hundred moidores; but, allowing for the proportion of all things between that country and Europe, and the high price of gold among them, was hardly ſo great a ſum as a thouſand guineas would be in England. I then ſaid to the Queen, ſince I was now her Majeſty's moſt humble creature and vaſſal, I muſt beg the favour, that Glumdalclitch, who had always tended me with ſo much care and kindneſs, and underſtood

derſtood to do it ſo well, might be admitted into her ſervice, and continue to be my nurſe and inſtructor. Her Majeſty agreed to my petition, and eaſily got the farmer's conſent, who was glad enough to have his daughter preferred at court; and the poor girl herſelf was not able to hide her joy: My late maſter withdrew, bidding me farewell, and ſaying he had left me in a good ſervice; to which I replied not a word, only making him a ſlight bow.

The Queen obſerved my coldneſs, and, when the farmer was gone out of the apartment, aſked me the reaſon. I made bold to tell her Majeſty, that I owed no other obligation to my late maſter, than his not daſhing out the brains of a poor harmleſs creature found by chance in his field; which obligation was amply recompenſed by the gain he had made in ſhewing me through half the kingdom, and the price he had now ſold me for. That the life I had ſince led, was laborious enough to kill an animal of ten times my ſtrength. That my health was much impaired by the continual drudgery of entertaining the rabble every hour of the day, and that, if my maſter had not thought my life in danger, her Majeſty would not have got ſo cheap a bargain. But as I was out of all fear of being ill treated under the protection of ſo great and good an Empreſs, the ornament of nature, the darling of the world, the delight of her ſubjects, the phœnix of the creation; ſo I hoped my late maſter's apprehenſions would appear to be groundleſs, for I already

found

found my ſpirits to revive by the influence of her moſt auguſt preſence.

This was the ſum of my ſpeech, delivered with great improprieties and heſitation; the latter part was altogether framed in the ſtyle peculiar to that people, whereof I learned ſome phraſes from Glumdalclitch, while ſhe was carrying me to court.

The Queen, giving great allowance for my defectiveneſs in ſpeaking, was however ſurpriſed at ſo much wit and good ſenſe in ſo diminutive an animal. She took me in her own hand, and carried me to the King, who was then retired to his cabinet. His Majeſty, a prince of much gravity and auſtere countenance, not well obſerving my ſhape at firſt view, aſked the Queen after a cold manner, how long it was ſince ſhe grew fond of a *ſplacknuck*; for ſuch it ſeems he took me to be, as I lay upon my breaſt in her Majeſty's right hand. But this princeſs, who hath an infinite deal of wit and humour, ſet me gently on my feet upon the ſcrutore, and commanded me to give his Majeſty an account of myſelf, which I did in a very few words; and Glumdalclitch, who attended at the cabinet-door, and could not endure I ſhould be out of her ſight, being admitted, confirmed all that had paſſed from my arrival at her father's houſe.

The King, although he be as learned a perſon as any in his dominions, had been educated in the ſtudy of philoſophy, and particularly mathematics; yet when he obſerved my ſhape exactly,

and ſaw me walk erect, before I began to ſpeak, conceived I might be a piece of clockwork (which is in that country arrived to a very great perfection) contrived by ſome ingenious artiſt. But when he heard my voice, and found what I delivered to be regular and rational, he could not conceal his aſtoniſhment. He was by no means ſatisfied with the relation I gave him of the manner I came into his kingdom, but thought it a ſtory concerted between Glumdalclitch and her father, who had taught me a ſet of words to make me ſell at a better price. Upon this imagination he put ſeveral other queſtions to me, and ſtill received rational anſwers, no otherwiſe defective than by a foreign accent, and an imperfect knowledge in the language, with ſome ruſtic phraſes, which I had learned at the farmer's houſe, and did not ſuit the polite ſtyle of a court.

His Majeſty ſent for three great ſcholars, who were then in their weekly waiting, according to the cuſtom in that country. Theſe gentlemen, after they had a while examined my ſhape with much nicety, were of different opinions concerning me. They all agreed, that I could not be produced according to the regular laws of nature, becauſe I was not framed with a capacity of preſerving my life either by ſwiftneſs, or climbing of trees, or digging holes in the earth. They obſerved by my teeth, which they viewed with great exactneſs, that I was a carnivorous animal; yet moſt quadrupeds being an over-match for me, and

and field-mice, with ſome others too nimble, they could not imagine how I ſhould be able to ſupport myſelf, unleſs I fed upon ſnails and other inſects, which they offered, by many learned arguments, to evince that I could not poſſibly do *. One of theſe virtuoſi ſeemed to think that I might be an embryo, or abortive birth. But this opinion was rejected by the other two, who obſerved my limbs to be perfect and finiſhed, and that I had lived ſeveral years, as it was manifeſt from my beard, the ſtumps whereof they plainly diſcovered through a magnifying glaſs. They would not allow me to be a dwarf, becauſe my littleneſs was beyond all degrees of compariſon; for the Queen's favourite dwarf, the ſmalleſt ever known in that kingdom, was near thirty feet high. After much debate, they concluded unanimouſly, that I was only *relplum ſcalcath*, which is interpreted literally *luſus naturæ*; a determination exactly agreeable to the modern philoſophy of Europe, whoſe profeſſors, diſdaining the old evaſion of *occult cauſes*, whereby the followers of Ariſtotle endeavoured in vain to diſguiſe their ignorance, have invented this wonderful ſolution of all difficulties, to the unſpeakable advancement of human knowledge.

* By this reaſoning the author probably intended to ridicule the pride of thoſe philoſophers, who have thought fit to arraign the wiſdom of Providence in the creation and government of the world; whoſe cavils are ſpecious, like thoſe of the Brobdingnagian ſages, only in proportion to the ignorance of thoſe to whom they are propoſed. *Hawkeſ.*

After this deciſive concluſion, I entreated to be heard a word or two. I applied myſelf to the king, and aſſured his Majeſty that I came from a country, which abounded with ſeveral millions of both ſexes and of my own ſtature; where the animals, trees, and houſes were all in proportion, and where by conſequence I might be as able to defend myſelf, and to find ſuſtenance, as any of his Majeſty's ſubjects could do here; which I took for a full anſwer to thoſe gentlemens arguments. To this they only replied with a ſmile of contempt, ſaying, that the farmer had inſtructed me very well in my leſſon *. The king, who had a much better underſtanding, diſmiſſing his learned men, ſent for the farmer, who by good fortune was not yet gone out of town; having therefore firſt examined him privately, and then confronted him with me and the young girl, his Majeſty began to think that what we told him might poſſibly be true. He deſired the Queen to order that a particular care ſhould be taken of me, and was of opinion that Glumdalclitch ſhould ſtill continue in her office of tending me, becauſe he obſerved we had a great affection for each other. A convenient apartment was provided for her at court; ſhe had a ſort of governeſs appointed to take care of her

* This ſatire is levelled againſt all who reject thoſe facts for which they cannot perfectly account, notwithſtanding the abſurdity of rejecting the teſtimony by which they are ſupported. *Hawkeſ.*

her education, a maid to dreſs her, and two other ſervants for menial offices; but the care of me was wholly appropriated to herſelf. The Queen commanded her own cabinet-maker to contrive a box, that might ſerve me for a bed-chamber, after the model that Glumdalclitch and I ſhould agree upon. This man was a moſt ingenious artiſt, and, according to my directions, in three weeks finiſhed for me a wooden chamber of ſixteen feet ſquare, and twelve high, with ſaſh-windows, a door and two cloſets, like a London bed-chamber. The board, that made the cieling, was to be lifted up and down by two hinges to put in a bed ready furniſhed by her Majeſty's upholſterer, which Glumdalclitch took out every day to air, made it with her own hands, and letting it down at night, locked up the roof over me. A nice workman, who was famous for little curioſities, undertook to make me two chairs, with backs and frames, of a ſubſtance not unlike ivory, and two tables, with a cabinet, to put my things in. The room was quilted on all ſides, as well as the floor and the cieling, to prevent any accident from the careleſſneſs of thoſe who carried me, and to break the force of a jolt when I went in a coach. I deſired a lock for my door to prevent rats and mice from coming in: The ſmith, after ſeveral attempts, made the ſmalleſt that ever was ſeen among them, for I have known a larger at the gate of a gentleman's houſe in England. I made

a ſhift to keep the key in a pocket of my own, fearing Glumdalclitch might loſe it. The Queen likewiſe ordered the thinneſt ſilks that could be gotten to make me clothes, not much thicker than an Engliſh blanket, very cumberſome, till I was accuſtomed to them. They were after the faſhion of the kingdom, partly reſembling the Perſian, and partly the Chineſe, and are a very grave and decent habit.

The Queen became ſo fond of my company, that ſhe could not dine without me. I had a table placed upon the ſame at which her Majeſty eat, juſt at her left elbow, and a chair to ſit on. Glumdalclicth ſtood on a ſtool on the floor near my table, to aſſiſt and take care of me. I had an entire ſet of ſilver diſhes and plates, and other neceſſaries, which, in proportion to thoſe of the Queen, were not much bigger than what I have ſeen in London toy-ſhops, for the furniture of a baby-houſe; theſe my little nurſe kept in her pocket in a ſilver box, and gave me at meals as I wanted them, always cleaning them herſelf. No perſon dined with the Queen but the two princeſſes royal, the elder ſixteen years old, and the younger at that time thirteen and a month. Her Majeſty uſed to put a bit of meat upon one of my diſhes, out of which I carved for myſelf; and her diverſion was to ſee me eat in miniature. For the Queen (who had indeed but a weak ſtomach) took up, at one mouthful, as much as a dozen Engliſh farmers could eat at a meal, which to me was

for

for ſome time a very nauſeous ſight *. She would craunch the wing of a lark, bones and all, between her teeth, although it were nine times as large as that of a full-grown turkey; and put a bit of bread in her mouth, as big as two twelve-penny loaves. She drank out of a golden cup, above a hogſhead at a draught. Her knives were twice as long as a ſcythe, ſet ſtrait upon the handle. The ſpoons, forks, and other inſtruments, were all in the ſame proportion. I remember, when Glumdalclitch carried me out of curioſity to ſee ſome of the tables at court, where ten or a dozen of theſe enormous knives and forks were lifted up together, I thought I had never till then beheld ſo terrible a ſight.

It is the cuſtom, that every Wedneſday (which, as I have before obſerved, is their Sabbath) the King and Queen, with the royal iſſue of both ſexes, dine together in the apartment of his Majeſty, to whom I was now become a great favourite; and at theſe times my little chair and table were

* Among other dreadful and diſguſting images which cuſtom has rendered familiar, are thoſe which ariſe from eating animal food. He who has ever turned with abhorrence from the ſkeleton of a beaſt which has been picked whole by birds or vermin, muſt confeſs, that habit only could have enabled him to endure the ſight of the mangled bones and fleſh of a dead carcaſe which every day cover his table: And he who reflects on the number of lives that have been ſacrificed to ſuſtain his own, ſhould enquire by what account has been balanced, and whether his life is become proportionably of more value, by the exerciſe of virtue and piety, by the ſuperior happineſs which he has communicated to reaſonable beings, and by the glory which his intellect has aſcribed to God. *Hawkeſ.*

were placed at his left hand before one of the ſalt cellars. This prince took a pleaſure in converſing with me, enquiring into the manners, religion, laws, government, and learning of Europe; wherein I gave him the beſt account I was able. His apprehenſion was ſo clear, and his judgment ſo exact, that he made very wiſe reflections and obſervations upon all I ſaid. But I confeſs, that after I had been a little too copious in talking of my own beloved country, of our trade, and wars by ſea and land, of our ſchiſms in religion, and parties in the ſtate; the prejudices of his education prevailed ſo far, that he could not forbear taking me up in his right hand, and, ſtroaking me gently with the other, after a hearty fit of laughing, aſked me, whether I was a Whig or Tory? Then turning to his firſt miniſter, who waited behind him with a white ſtaff near as tall as the mainmaſt of the Royal Sovereign, he obſerved how contemptible a thing was human grandeur, which could be mimicked by ſuch diminutive inſects as I: And yet, ſays he, I dare engage, theſe creatures have their titles and diſtinctions of honour; they contrive little neſts and burrows, that they call houſes and cities; they make a figure in dreſs and equipage; they love, they fight, they diſpute, they cheat, they betray. And thus he continued on, while my colour came and went ſeveral times with indignation to hear our noble country, the miſtreſs of arts and arms, the ſcourge of France, the arbitreſs of Europe, the ſeat of virtue, piety, honour

honour and truth, the pride and envy of the world, ſo contemptuouſly treated.

But as I was not in a condition to reſent injuries, ſo, upon mature thoughts, I began to doubt whether I was injured or no. For, having been accuſtomed ſeveral months to the ſight and converſe of this people, and obſerved every object upon which I caſt mine eyes to be of proportionable magnitude, the horror I had at firſt conceived from their bulk and aſpect, was ſo far worn off, that if I had then beheld a company of Engliſh lords and ladies in their finery, and birth-day clothes, acting their ſeveral parts in the moſt courtly manner of ſtrutting, and bowing, and prating; to ſay the truth, I ſhould have been ſtrongly tempted to laugh as much at them, as the King and his grandees did at me. Neither indeed could I forbear ſmiling at myſelf, when the Queen uſed to place me upon her hand towards a looking-glaſs, by which both our perſons appeared before me in full view together; and there could nothing be more ridiculous than the compariſon: So that I really began to imagine myſelf dwindled many degrees below my uſual ſize.

Nothing angered and mortified me ſo much as the Queen's dwarf, who being of the loweſt ſtature that was ever in that country (for I verily think he was not full thirty feet high) became ſo inſolent at ſeeing a creature ſo much beneath him, that he would always affect to ſwagger, and look big, as he paſſed by me in the

Queen's

Queen's antichamber, while I was ſtandi
ſome table talking with the lords or ladies
court, and he ſeldom failed of a ſmart w
two upon my littleneſs; againſt which I
only revenge myſelf by calling him brother
lenging him to wreſtle, and ſuch repartees
uſual in the mouths of *court-pages*. One
dinner, this malicious little cub was ſo
with ſomething I had ſaid to him, that,
himſelf upon the frame of her Majeſty's
he took me up by the middle, as I was
down not thinking any harm, and let m
into a large ſilver bowl of cream, and th
away as faſt as he could. I fell over he
ears, and, if I had not been a good ſwimn
might have gone very hard with me: for
dalclitch in that inſtant happened to be
other end of the room, and the Queen
ſuch a fright, that ſhe wanted preſence of
to aſſiſt me. But my little nurſe ran to
lief, and took me out, after I had ſwa
above a quart of cream. I was put to
however I received no other damage tha
loſs of a ſuit of clothes, which was utterly
ed. The dwarf was ſoundly whipped, and
farther puniſhment, forced to drink up th
of cream, into which he had thrown me
ther was he ever reſtored to favour: Fo
after the Queen beſtowed him on a lady o
quality, ſo that I ſaw him no more, to m
great ſatisfaction; for I could not tell to

I exti

extremity ſuch a malicious urchin might have carried his reſentment.

He had before ſerved me a ſcurvy trick, which ſet the Queen a-laughing, although at the ſame time ſhe was heartily vexed, and would have immediately caſhiered him, if I had not been ſo generous as to intercede. Her Majeſty had taken a marrow-bone upon her plate, and, after knocking out the marrow, placed the bone again in the diſh erect, as it ſtood before; the dwarf watching his opportunity, while Glumdalclith was gone to the ſide-board, mounted the ſtool that ſhe ſtood on to take care of me at meals, took me up in both hands, and ſqueezing my legs together, wedged them into the marrow-bone above my waiſt, where I ſtuck for ſome time, and made a very ridiculous figure. I believe it was near a minute before any one knew what was become of me; for I thought it below me to cry out. But, as princes ſeldom get their meat hot, my legs were not ſcalded, only my ſtockings and breeches in a ſad condition. The dwarf, at my entreaty, had no other puniſhment than a ſound whipping.

I was frequently rallied by the Queen on account of my fearfulneſs; and ſhe uſed to aſk me, Whether the people of my country were as great cowards as myſelf? The occaſion was this: The kingdom is much peſtered with flies in ſummer, and theſe odious inſects, each of them as big as a Dunſtable lark, hardly gave me any reſt while I ſat at dinner, with their continual humming

buzzing about mine ears. They would ſometimes alight upon my victuals, and leave their loathſome excrement or ſpawn behind, which to me was very viſible, though not to the natives of that country, whoſe large optics were not ſo acute as mine in viewing ſmaller objects. Sometimes they would fix upon my noſe or forehead, where they ſtung me to the quick, ſmelling very offenſively; and I could eaſily trace that viſcous matter, which our naturaliſts tell us, enables thoſe creatures to walk with their feet upwards on a ceiling. I had much ado to defend myſelf againſt theſe deteſtable animals, and could not forbear ſtarting when they came on my face. It was the common practice of the dwarf to catch a number of theſe inſects in his hand, as ſchoolboys do among us, and let them out ſuddenly under my noſe, on purpoſe to frighten me, and divert the Queen. My remedy was to cut them in pieces with my knife, as they flew in the air, wherein my dexterity was much admired.

I remember, one morning when Glumdalclitch had ſet me in my box upon a window, as ſhe uſually did in fair days to give me air (for I durſt not venture to let the box be hung on a nail out of the window, as we do with cages in England) after I had lifted up one of my ſaſhes, and ſat down at my table to eat a piece of ſweet cake for my breakfaſt, above twenty waſps, allured by the ſmell, came flying into the room, humming louder than the drones of as many bag-pipes. Some of them ſeized my cake, and carried it piece-

meal

meal away; others flew about my head and face, confounding me with the noiſe, and putting me in the utmoſt terror of their ſtings. However I had the courage to riſe and draw my hanger, and attack them in the air. I diſpatched four of them, but the reſt got away, and I preſently ſhut my window. Theſe inſects were as large as partridges; I took out their ſtings, found them an inch and an half long, and as ſharp as needles. I carefully preſerved them all; and having ſince ſhewn them with ſome other curioſities in ſeveral parts of Europe, upon my return to England, I gave three of them to Greſham college, and kept the fourth for myſelf.

CHAP. IV.

The country deſcribed. A propoſal for correcting modern maps. The King's palace, and ſome account of the metropolis. The author's way of travelling. The chief temple deſcribed.

I Now intend to give the reader a ſhort deſcription of this country, as far as I travelled in it, which was not above two thouſand miles round Lorbrulgrud, the metropolis. For the Queen whom I always attended, never went farther when ſhe accompanied the King in his progreſſes, and there ſtaid till his Majeſty returned from viewing his frontiers. The whole extent of this

prince's dominions reached about ſix thouſand miles in length, and from three to five in breadth. From whence I cannot but conclude, that our geographers of Europe are in a great error by ſuppoſing nothing but ſea between Japan and California; for it was ever my opinion, that there muſt be a balance of earth to counterpoiſe the great continent of Tartary; and therefore they ought to correct their maps and charts by joining this vaſt tract of land to the north-weſt parts of America, wherein I ſhall be ready to lend them my aſſiſtance.

The kingdom is a peninſula, terminated to the north-eaſt by a ridge of mountains thirty miles high, which are altogether impaſſable by reaſon of the volcanoes upon the tops: Neither do the moſt learned know what ſort of mortals inhabit beyond thoſe mountains, or whether they be inhabited at all. On the three other ſides it is bounded by the ocean. There is not one ſea-port in the whole kingdom; and thoſe parts of the coaſts into which the rivers iſſue, are ſo full of pointed rocks, and the ſea generally ſo rough, that there is no venturing with the ſmalleſt of their boats; ſo that theſe people are wholly excluded from any commerce with the reſt of the world. But the large rivers are full of veſſels, and abound with excellent fiſh, for they ſeldom get any from the ſea, becauſe the ſea-fiſh are of the ſame ſize with thoſe in Europe, and conſequently not worth catching; whereby it is manifeſt, that nature, in the production of plants and animals

animals of ſo extraordinary a bulk, is wholly confined to this continent, of which I leave the reaſons to be determined by philoſophers. However, now and then they take a whale that happens to be daſhed againſt the rocks, which the common people feed on heartily. Theſe whales I have known ſo large, that a man could hardly carry one upon his ſhoulders; and ſometimes for curioſity they are brought in hampers to Lorbrulgrud: I ſaw one of them in a diſh at the King's table, which paſſed for a rarity, but I did not obſerve he was fond of it; for I think indeed the bigneſs diſguſted him, although I have ſeen one ſomewhat larger in Greenland.

The country is well inhabited, for it contains fifty-one cities, near an hundred walled towns, and a great number of villages. To ſatisfy my curious reader, it may be ſufficient to deſcribe Lorbrulgrud. This city ſtands upon almoſt two equal parts on each ſide the river that paſſes through. It contains above eighty thouſand houſes, and about ſix hundred thouſand inhabitants. It is in length three *glomglungs* (which make about fifty-four Engliſh miles) and two and a half in breadth, as I meaſured it myſelf in the royal map made by the King's order, which was laid on the ground on purpoſe for me, and extended an hundred feet: I paced the diameter and circumference ſeveral times barefoot, and, computing by the ſcale, meaſured it pretty exactly.

The King's palace is no regular edifice, but an heap of building about ſeven miles round; the

chief rooms are generally two hundred and forty feet high, and broad and long in proportion. A coach was allowed to Glumdalclitch and me, wherein her governeſs frequently took her out to ſee the town, or go among the ſhops; and I was always of the party, carried in my box; although the girl, at my own deſire, would often take me out, and hold me in her hand, that I might more conveniently view the houſes and people, as we paſſed along the ſtreets. I reckoned our coach to be about a ſquare of Weſtminſter-hall, but not altogether ſo high: However, I cannot be very exact. One day the governeſs ordered our coachman to ſtop at ſeveral ſhops, where the beggars, watching their opportunity, crouded to the ſides of the coach, and gave me the moſt horrible ſpectacles that ever an European eye beheld. There was a woman with a cancer in her breaſt, ſwelled to a monſtrous ſize, full of holes, in two or three of which I could have eaſily crept, and covered my whole body. There was a fellow with a wen in his neck larger than five woolpacks, and another with a couple of wooden legs, each about twenty feet high. But the moſt hateful ſight of all was the lice crawling on their cloaths. I could ſee diſtinctly the limbs of theſe vermin with my naked eye, much better than thoſe of an European louſe through a microſcope, and their ſnouts with which they routed like ſwine. They were the firſt I had ever beheld, and I ſhould have been curious enough to diſſect one of them, if I had had proper inſtruments (which

I unluckily left behind me in the ſhip) although indeed the ſight was ſo nauſeous, that it perfectly turned my ſtomach.

Beſides the large box in which I was uſually carried, the Queen ordered a ſmaller one to be made for me of about twelve feet ſquare and ten high, for the convenience of travelling, becauſe the other was ſomewhat too large for Glumdalclitch's lap, and cumberſome in the coach; it was made by the ſame artiſt, whom I directed in the whole contrivance. This travelling cloſet was an exact ſquare with a window in the middle of three of the ſquares, and each window was latticed with iron wire on the outſide, to prevent accidents in long journies. On the fourth ſide, which had no window, two ſtrong ſtaples were fixed, through which the perſon that carried me, when I had a mind to be on horſeback, put a leathern belt, and buckled it about his waiſt. This was always the office of ſome grave truſty ſervant in whom I could confide, whether I attended the King and Queen in their progreſſes, or were diſpoſed to ſee the gardens, or pay a viſit to ſome great lady or miniſter of ſtate in the court, when Glumdalclitch happened to be out of order: For I ſoon began to be known and eſteemed among the greateſt officers, I ſuppoſe more upon account of their Majeſties favour than any merit of my own. In journies, when I was weary of the coach, a ſervant on horſeback would buckle on my box, and place it upon a cuſhion before him; and there I had a full proſpect of the country on three ſides

from

from my three windows. I had in this
field-bed and a hammock hung from the
two chairs and a table, neatly ſcrewed
floor, to prevent being toſſed about by th
tion of the horſe or the coach. And havi
long uſed to ſea-voyages, thoſe motions, al
ſometimes very violent, did not much diſc
me.

Whenever I had a mind to ſee the tc
was always in my travelling-cloſet, which
dalclitch held in her lap in a kind of open
after the faſhion of the country, borne b
men, and attended by two others in the C
livery. The people, who had often heard
were very curious to croud about the ſeda
the girl was complaiſant enough to mal
bearers ſtop, and to take me in her hand,
might be more conveniently ſeen.

I was very deſirous to ſee the chief templ
particularly the tower belonging to it, wl
reckoned the higheſt in the kingdom. A
ingly one day my nurſe carried me thither,
may truly ſay I came back diſappointed: F
height is not above three thouſand feet, re
ing from the ground to the higheſt pinnacl
which. allowing for the difference betwee
ſize of thoſe people and us in Europe, is no
matter for admiration, nor at all equal in
portion (if I rightly remember) to Sal
ſteeple. But, not to detract from a natic
which during my life I ſhall acknowledge 1
extremely obliged, it muſt be allowed, that

ever this famous tower wants in height is amply made up in beauty and ſtrength. For the walls are near an hundred feet thick, built of hewn ſtone, whereof each is about forty feet ſquare, and adorned on all ſides with ſtatues of gods and emperors, cut in marble larger than the life, placed in their ſeveral niches. I meaſured a little finger which had fallen down from one of thoſe ſtatues, and lay unperceived among ſome rubbiſh, and found it exactly four feet and an inch in length. Glumdalclitch wrapped it up in her handkerchief, and carried it home in her pocket to keep among other trinkets, of which the girl was very fond, as children at her age uſually are.

The King's kitchen is indeed a noble building, vaulted at top, and about ſix hundred feet high. The great oven is not ſo wide by ten paces as the cupola at St Paul's; for I meaſured the latter on purpoſe after my return. But if I ſhould deſcribe the kitchen-grate, the prodigious pots and kettles, the joints of meat turning on the ſpits, with many other particulars, perhaps I ſhould be hardly believed; at leaſt a ſevere critic would be apt to think I enlarged a little, as travellers are often ſuſpected to do. To avoid which cenſure, I fear I have run too much into the other extreme; and that if this treatiſe ſhould happen to be tranſlated into the language of Brobdingnag, (which is the general name of that kingdom) and tranſmitted thither, the King and his people would have reaſon to complain, that I had done them

them an injury by a falſe and diminutive repreſentation.

His Majeſty ſeldom keeps above ſix hundred horſes in his ſtables: They are generally from fifty-four to ſixty feet high. But, when he goes abroad on ſolemn days, he is attended for ſtate by a militia-guard of five hundred horſe, which indeed I thought was the moſt ſplendid ſight that could be ever beheld, till I ſaw part of his army in battalia, whereof I ſhall find another occaſion to ſpeak.

CHAP. V.

Several adventures that happened to the author. The execution of a criminal. The author ſhews his ſkill in navigation.

I Should have lived happy enough in that country, if my littleneſs had not expoſed me to ſeveral ridiculous and troubleſome accidents; ſome of which I ſhall venture to relate. Glumdalclitch often carried me into the gardens of the court in my ſmaller box, and would ſometimes take me out of it, and hold me in her hand, or ſet me down to walk. I remember, before the dwarf left the Queen, he followed us one day into thoſe gardens, and my nurſe having ſet me down, he and I being cloſe together, near ſome dwarf apple-trees, I muſt need ſhew my wit by a ſilly

ſilly alluſion between him and the trees, which happens to hold in their language, as it doth in ours. Whereupon, the malicious rogue watching his opportunity, when I was walking under one of them, ſhook it directly over my head, by which a dozen apples, each of them near as large as a Briſtol barrel, came tumbling about my ears; one of them hit me on the back as I chanced to ſtoop, and knocked me down flat on my face; but I received no other hurt, and the dwarf was pardoned at my deſire, becauſe I had given the provocation.

Another day Glumdalclitch left me on a ſmooth graſs-plot to divert myſelf, while ſhe walked at ſome diſtance with her governeſs. In the mean time there ſuddenly fell ſuch a violent ſhower of hail, that I was immediately by the force of it ſtruck to the ground: And when I was down, the hail-ſtones gave me ſuch cruel bangs all over the body, as if I had been pelted with tennis-balls; however, I made a ſhift to creep on all four, and ſhelter myſelf by lying flat on my face on the lee-ſide of a border of lemon-thyme, but ſo bruiſed from head to foot, that I could not go abroad in ten days. Neither is this at all to be wondered at, becauſe nature in that country obſerving the ſame proportion through all her operations, a hail-ſtone is near eighteen hundred times as large as one in Europe, which I can aſſert upon experience, having been ſo curious to weigh and meaſure them.

But

But a more dangerous accident happened to me in the ſame garden, when my little nurſe believing ſhe had put me in a ſecure place, which I often entreated her to do, that I might enjoy my own thoughts, and having left my box at home to avoid the trouble of carrying it, went to another part of the garden with her governeſs, and ſome ladies of her acquaintance. While ſhe was abſent, and out of hearing, a ſmall white ſpaniel belonging to one of the chief gardeners, having got by accident into the garden, happened to range near the place where I lay: The dog, following the ſcent, came directly up, and taking me in his mouth ran ſtraight to his maſter, wagging his tail, and ſet me gently on the ground. By good fortune he had been ſo ſo well taught, that I was carried between his teeth without the leaſt hurt, or even tearing my clothes. But the poor gardener, who knew me well, and had a great kindneſs for me, was in a terrible fright: He gently took me up in both his hands, and aſked me how I did; but I was ſo amazed and out of breath, that I could not ſpeak a word. In a few minutes I came to myſelf, and he carried me ſafe to my little nurſe, who by this time had returned to the place where ſhe left me, and was in cruel agonies when I did not appear, nor anſwer when ſhe called: She ſeverely reprimanded the gardener on account of his dog. But the thing was huſhed up, and never known at court; for the girl was afraid of the Queen's anger; and truly, as to myſelf,

I thought it would not be for my reputation that ſuch a ſtory ſhould go about.

This accident abſolutely determined Glumdalclitch never to truſt me abroad for the future out of her ſight. I had been long afraid of this reſolution, and therefore concealed from her ſome little unlucky adventures that happened in thoſe times when I was left by myſelf. Once a kite, hovering over the garden, made a ſtoop at me, and if I had not reſolutely drawn my hanger, and run under a thick eſpalier, he would have certainly carried me away in his talons. Another time walking to the top of a freſh mole-hill, I fell to my neck in the hole, through which that animal had caſt up the earth, and coined ſome lie, not worth remembering, to excuſe myſelf for ſpoiling my clothes. I likewiſe broke my right ſhin againſt the ſhell of a ſnail, which I happened to ſtumble over as I was walking alone, and thinking on poor England.

I cannot tell, whether I were more pleaſed or mortified to obſerve in thoſe ſolitary walks, that the ſmaller birds did not appear to be at all afraid of me, but would hop about within a yard's diſtance, looking for worms and other food, with as much indifference and ſecurity, as if no creature at all were near them. I remember, a thruſh had the confidence to ſnatch out of my hand, with his bill, a piece of cake that Glumdalclitch had juſt given me for my breakfaſt. When I attempted to catch any of theſe birds, they would boldly turn againſt me, endeavouring

to pick my fingers, which I durſt not venture within their reach; and then they would hop back unconcerned to hunt for worms or ſnails, as they did before. But one day I took a thick cudgel, and threw it with all my ſtrength ſo luckily at a linnet, that I knocked him down, and ſeizing him by the neck with both my hands, ran with him in triumph to my nurſe. However the bird, who had only been ſtunned, recovering himſelf, gave me ſo many boxes with his wings on both ſides of my head and body, though I held him at arms length, and was out of the reach of his claws, that I was twenty times thinking to let him go. But I was ſoon relieved by one of our ſervants, who wrung off the bird's neck, and I had him next day for dinner by the Queen's command. This linnet, as near as I can remember, ſeemed to be ſomewhat larger than an Engliſh ſwan.

The maids of honour often invited Glumdalclitch to their apartments, and deſired ſhe would bring me along with her, on purpoſe to have the pleaſure of ſeeing and touching me. They would often ſtrip me naked from top to toe, and lay me at full length in their boſoms; wherewith I was much diſguſted; becauſe, to ſay the truth, a very offenſive ſmell came from their ſkins; which I do not mention, or intend, to the diſadvantage of thoſe excellent ladies, for whom I have all manner of reſpect; but I conceive that my ſenſe was more acute in proportion to my littleneſs, and that thoſe illuſtrious perſons were no more

more diſagreeable to their lovers, or to each other, than people of the ſame quality are with us in England. And, after all, I found their natural ſmell was much more ſupportable, than when they uſed perfumes, under which I immediately ſwooned away. I cannot forget, that an intimate friend of mine in Lilliput took the freedom in a warm day, when I had uſed a good deal of exerciſe, to complain of a ſtrong ſmell about me, although I am as little faulty that way, as moſt of my ſex: But I ſuppoſe his faculty of ſmelling was as nice with regard to me, as mine was to that of this people. Upon this point, I cannot forbear doing juſtice to the Queen my miſtreſs, and Glumdalclitch my nurſe, whoſe perſons were as ſweet as thoſe of any lady in England.

That which gave me moſt uneaſineſs among theſe maids of honour (when my nurſe carried me to viſit them) was to ſee them uſe me without any manner of ceremony, like a creature who had no ſort of conſequence: For they would ſtrip themſelves to the ſkin, and put on their ſmocks in my preſence, while I was placed on their toilet, directly before their naked bodies, which I am ſure to me was very far from being a tempting ſight, or from giving me any other emotions, than thoſe of horror and diſguſt. Their ſkins appeared ſo coarſe and uneven, ſo variouſly coloured, when I ſaw them near, with a mole here and there as broad as a trencher, and hairs hanging from it thicker than pack-

threads, to ſay nothing farther concerning the reſt of their perſons. Neither did they at all ſcruple, while I was by, to diſcharge what they had drank, to the quantity at leaſt of two hogſheads, in a veſſel that held above three tuns. The handſomeſt among thoſe maids of honour, a pleaſant frolicſome girl of ſixteen, would ſometimes ſet me aſtride upon one of her nipples, with many other tricks, wherein the reader will excuſe me for not being over particular. But I was ſo much diſpleaſed, that I entreated Glumdalclitch to contrive ſome excuſe for not ſeeing that young lady any more.

One day a young gentleman, who was nephew to my nurſe's governeſs, came and preſſed them both to ſee an execution. It was of a man, who had murdered one of that gentleman's intimate acquaintance. Glumdalclitch was prevailed on to be of the company, very much againſt her inclination, for ſhe was naturally tender-hearted: And as for myſelf, although I abhorred ſuch kind of ſpectacles, yet my curioſity tempted me to ſee ſomething, that I thought muſt be extraordinary. The malefactor was fixed in a chair upon a ſcaffold erected for that purpoſe, and his head cut off at one blow with a ſword of about forty feet long. The veins and arteries ſpouted up ſuch a prodigious quantity of blood, and ſo high in the air, that the great Jette d'eau at Verſailles was not equal for the time it laſted; and the head, when it fell on the ſcaffold-floor, gave ſuch

a

a bounce as made me ſtart, although I were at leaſt half an Engliſh mile diſtant.

The Queen, who often uſed to hear me talk of my ſea-voyages, and took all occaſions to divert me when I was melancholy, aſked me whether I underſtood how to handle a ſail or an oar, and whether a little exerciſe of rowing might not be convenient for my health? I anſwered, that I underſtood both very well: For although my proper employment had been to be ſurgeon or doctor to the ſhip, yet often upon a pinch I was forced to work like a common mariner. But I could not ſee how this could be done in their country, where the ſmalleſt wherry was equal to a firſt rate man of war among us, and ſuch a boat as I could manage would never live in any of their rivers. Her Majeſty ſaid, if I would contrive a boat, her own joiner ſhould make it, and ſhe would provide a place for me to ſail in. The fellow was an ingenious workman, and by my inſtructions in ten days finiſhed a pleaſure-boat, with all its tackling, able conveniently to hold eight Europeans. When it was finiſhed, the Queen was ſo delighted, that ſhe ran with it in her lap to the King, who ordered it to be put into a ciſtern full of water with me in it, by way of trial; where I could not manage my two ſculls, or little oars, for want of room. But the Queen had before contrived another project. She ordered the joiner to make a wooden trough of three hundred feet long, fifty broad, and eight deep; which being well pitched, to prevent leaking, was placed on the floor along

the wall in an outer room of the palace. It had a cock near the bottom to let out the water, when it began to grow ſtale; and two ſervants could eaſily fill it in half an hour. Here I often uſed to row for my own diverſion, as well as that of the Queen and her ladies, who thought themſelves well entertained with my ſkill and agility. Sometimes I would put up my ſail, and then my buſineſs was only to ſteer, while the ladies gave me a gale with their fans; and, when they were weary, ſome of my pages would blow my ſail forward with their breath, while I ſhewed my art by ſteering ſtarboard or larboard, as I pleaſed. When I had done, Glumdalclitch always carried back my boat into her cloſet, and hung it on a nail to dry.

In this exerciſe I once met an accident which had like to have coſt me my life: For, one of the pages having put my boat into the trough, the governeſs, who attended Glumdalclitch, very officiouſly lifted me up to place me in the boat; but I happened to ſlip through her fingers, and ſhould infallibly have fallen down forty feet upon the floor, if, by the luckieſt chance in the world, I had not been ſtopped by a corking-pin that ſtuck in the good gentlewoman's ſtomacher; the head of the pin paſſed between my ſhirt and the waiſtband of my breeches, and thus I was held by the middle in the air, till Glumdalclitch ran to my relief.

Another time, one of the ſervants, whoſe office it was to fill my trough every third day with freſh

freſh water, was ſo careleſs as to let a huge frog (not perceiving it) ſlip out of his pail. The frog lay concealed till I was put into my boat, but then ſeeing a reſting-place, climbed up, and made it lean ſo much on one ſide, that I was forced to balance it with all my weight on the other, to prevent overturning. When the frog was got in, it hopped at once half the length of the boat, and then over my head, backwards and forwards, daubing my face and clothes with its odious ſlime. The largeneſs of its features made it appear the moſt deformed animal that can be conceived. However, I deſired Glumdalclitch to let me deal with it alone. I banged it a good while with one of my ſculls, and at laſt forced it to leap out of the boat.

But the greateſt danger I ever underwent in that kingdom, was from a monkey, who belonged to one of the clerks of the kitchen. Glumdalclitch had locked me up in her cloſet, while ſhe went ſomewhere upon buſineſs, or a viſit. The weather being very warm, the cloſet-window was left open, as well as the windows and the door of my bigger box, in which I uſually lived, becauſe of its largeneſs and conveniency. As I ſat quietly meditating at my table, I heard ſomething bounce in at the cloſet-window, and ſkip about from one ſide to the other: Whereat although I were much alarmed, yet I ventured to look out, but not ſtirring from my ſeat; and then I ſaw this frolicſome animal friſking and leaping up and down, till at laſt he came to my box,

box, which he ſeemed to view with great pleaſure and curioſity, peeping in at the door and every window. I retreated to the farther corner of my room, or box; but the monkey looking in at every ſide, put me into ſuch a fright, that I wanted preſence of mind to conceal myſelf under the bed, as I might eaſily have done. After ſome time ſpent in peeping, grinning, and chattering, he at laſt eſpied me, and reaching one of his paws in at the door, as a cat does when ſhe plays with a mouſe, although I often ſhifted place to avoid him, he at length ſeized the lappet of my coat (which, being made of that country ſilk, was very thick and ſtrong) and dragged me out. He took me up in his right fore-foot, and held me as a nurſe does a child ſhe is going to ſuckle, juſt as I have ſeen the ſame ſort of creature do with a kitten in Europe: And when I offered to ſtruggle, he ſqueezed me ſo hard, that I thought it more prudent to ſubmit. I have good reaſon to believe, that he took me for a young one of his own ſpecies, by his often ſtroaking my face very gently with his other paw. In theſe diverſions he was interrupted by a noiſe at the cloſet-door, as if ſomebody were opening it; whereupon he ſuddenly leaped up to the window, at which he had come in, and thence upon the leads and gutters, walking upon three legs, and holding me in the fourth, till he clambered up to a roof that was next to ours. I heard Glumdalclitch give a ſhriek at the moment he was carrying me out. The poor girl was almoſt diſtracted:

ıd: That quarter of the palace was all in an up-ɔar; the ſervants ran for ladders; the monkey was ſeen by hundreds in the court, ſitting upon he ridge of a building, holding me like a baby in ɔne of his fore-paws, and feeding me with the ɔther, by cramming into my mouth ſome vic-uals he had ſqueezed out of the bag on one ſide ɔf his chaps, and patting me when I would not ɐat; whereat many of the rabble below could not forbear laughing; neither do I think they juſtly ɔught to be blamed, for without queſtion the ight was ridiculous enough to every body but my-elf. Some of the people threw up ſtones, hop-ng to drive the monkey down; but this was ſtrictly forbidden, or elſe very probably my ɔrains had been daſhed out.

The ladders were now applied, and mounted ɔy ſeveral men; which the monkey obſerving, ınd finding himſelf almoſt encompaſſed, not be-ng able to make ſpeed enough with his three egs, let me drop on a ridge-tyle, and made his ɛſcape. Here I ſat for ſome time, five hundred ɣards from the ground, expecting every moment ɔ be blown down by the wind, or to fall by my ɔwn giddineſs, and come tumbling over and over rom the ridge to the eves: But an honeſt lad, ɔne of my nurſe's footmen, climbed up, and put-ing me into his breeches-pocket, brought me lown ſafe.

I was almoſt choaked with the filthy ſtuff the monkey had crammed down my throat; but my dear little nurſe picked it out of my mouth with

a

a ſmall needle, and then I fell a-vomiting, which gave me great relief. Yet I was ſo weak, and bruiſed in the ſides with the ſqueezes given me by this odious animal, that I was forced to keep my bed a fortnight. The King, Queen, and all the court, ſent every day to enquire after my health, and her Majeſty made me ſeveral viſits during my ſickneſs. The monkey was killed, and an order made that no ſuch animal ſhould be kept about the palace.

When I attended the King after my recovery, to return him thanks for his favours, he was pleaſed to rally me a good deal upon this adventure. He aſked me, what my thoughts and ſpeculations were while I lay in the monkey's paw; how I liked the victuals he gave me; his manner of feeding; and whether the freſh air on the roof had ſharpened my ſtomach. He deſired to know, what I would have done upon ſuch an occaſion in my own country. I told his Majeſty, that in Europe we had no monkies, except ſuch as were brought for curioſities from other places, and ſo ſmall, that I could deal with a dozen of them together, if they preſumed to attack me. And as for that monſtrous animal with whom I was ſo lately engaged (it was indeed as large as an elephant) if my fears had not ſuffered me to think ſo far as to make uſe of my hanger (looking fiercely, and clapping my hand upon the hilt, as I ſpoke) when he poked his paw into my chamber, perhaps I ſhould have given him ſuch a wound, as would have made him glad to withdraw it with more

more haſte than he put it in. This I delivered in a firm tone, like a perſon who was jealous leſt his courage ſhould be called in queſtion. However my ſpeech produced nothing elſe beſides a loud laughter, which all the reſpect due to his Majeſty from thoſe about him could not make them contain. This made me reflect, how vain an attempt it is for a man to endeavour to do himſelf honour among thoſe, who are out of all degree of equality or compariſon with him. And yet I have ſeen the moral of my own behaviour very frequent in England ſince my return, where a little contemptible varlet, without the leaſt title to birth, perſon, wit, or common ſenſe, ſhall preſume to look with importance, and put himſelf upon a foot with the greateſt perſons of the kingdom.

I was every day furniſhing the court with ſome ridiculous ſtory; and Glumdalclitch, although ſhe loved me to exceſs, yet was arch enough to inform the Queen, whenever I committed any folly that ſhe thought would be diverting to her Majeſty. The girl, who had been out of order, was carried by her governeſs to take the air about an hour's diſtance, or thirty miles from town. They alighted out of the coach near a ſmall foot-path in a field, and Glumdalclitch ſetting down my travelling-box, I went out of it to walk. There was a cow-dung in the path, and I muſt needs try my activity by attempting to leap over it. I took a run, but unfortunately jumped ſhort, and found myſelf juſt in the middle up to

my

my knees. I waded through with ſome difficulty, and one of the footmen wiped me as clean as he could with his handkerchief; for I was filthily bemired, and my nurſe confined me to my box, till we returned home; where the Queen was ſoon informed of what had paſſed, and the footmen ſpread it about the court; ſo that all the mirth for ſome days was at my expence.

CHAP. VI*.

Several contrivances of the author to pleaſe the King and Queen. He ſhews his ſkill in muſic. The King enquires into the ſtate of England, which the author relates to him. The King's obſervations thereon.

I Uſed to attend the King's levee once or twice a-week, and had often ſeen him under the barber's hand, which indeed was at firſt very terrible

* In this chapter the author gives an account of the political ſtate of Europe. His obſervations are delivered with his uſual ſpirit of humour and ſeverity. He appears moſt particularly affected with the proceedings of the courts of judicature, and complains of being almoſt ruined by a chancery-ſuit, which was *determined in his favour with coſts.* It muſt be confeſſed, that inſtances of this kind are too frequent in our courts of juſtice; and they leave us no room to boaſt of the execution of our preſent laws, however excellent the laws, in their own original foundation, may have been. *Judgment, when turned into wormwood, is bitter;* but delays, as Lord Bacon obſerves, turn it into

rible to behold; for the razor was almoſt twice as long as an ordinary ſcythe. His Majeſty, according to the cuſtom of the country, was only ſhaved twice a-week. I once prevailed on the barber to give me ſome of the ſuds or lather, out of which I picked forty or fifty of the ſtrongeſt ſtumps of hair. I then took a piece of fine wood, and cut it like the back of a comb, making ſeveral holes in it at equal diſtance with as ſmall a needle as I could get from Glumdalclitch. I fixed in the ſtumps ſo artificially, ſcraping and ſloping them with my knife towards the points, that I made a very tolerable comb; which was a ſeaſonable ſupply, my own being ſo much broken in the teeth, that it was almoſt uſeleſs: Neither did I know any artiſt in that country ſo nice and exact, as would undertake to make me another.

And this puts me in mind of an amuſement, wherein I ſpent many of my leiſure hours. I deſired the Queen's woman to ſave for me the combings of her Majeſty's hair, whereof in time I got a good quantity; and conſulting with my

vinegar. It becomes ſharp and corroding: And certainly it is more eligible to die immediately by the wound of an enemy, than to decay lingering by poiſon, adminiſtered from a ſeeming friend. *Orrery.*

The noble commentator is miſtaken as to his firſt obſervation; for Gulliver has here given a political account of no country but England. It is however a miſtake to which any commentator would have been liable, who had read little more than the titles or contents of the chapters, into which this work is divided; for the word *Europe* has in ſome Engliſh, and all the Iriſh editions, been printed in the title of this chapter, inſtead of *England*. *Hawkeſ.*

friend the cabinet-maker, who had received general orders to do little jobs for me, I directed him to make two chair-frames, no larger than thoſe I had in my box, and then to bore little holes with a fine awl round thoſe parts where I deſigned the backs and ſeats; through theſe holes I wove the ſtrongeſt hairs I could pick out, juſt after the manner of cane-chairs in England. When they were finiſhed, I made a preſent of them to her Majeſty, who kept them in her cabinet, and uſed to ſhew them for curioſities, as indeed they were the wonder of every one that beheld them. The Queen would have had me ſit upon one of theſe chairs; but I abſolutely refuſed to obey her, proteſting I would rather die a thouſand deaths than place a diſhonourable part of my body on thoſe precious hairs, that once adorned her Majeſty's head. Of theſe hairs (as I had always a mechanical genius) I likewiſe made a neat little purſe about five feet long, with her Majeſty's name deciphered in gold letters, which I gave to Glumdalclitch by the Queen's conſent. To ſay the truth, it was more for ſhew than uſe, being not of ſtrength to bear the weight of the larger coins, and therefore ſhe kept nothing in it but ſome little toys that girls are fond of.

The King, who delighted in muſic, had frequent concerts at court, to which I was ſometimes carried, and ſet in my box on a table to hear them: But the noiſe was ſo great, that I could hardly diſtinguiſh the tunes. I am confident,

dent, that all the drums and trumpets of a royal army, beating and ſounding together juſt at your ears, could not equal it. My practice was to have my box removed from the place where the performers ſat, as far as I could, then to ſhut the doors and windows of it, and draw the window-curtains; after which I found their muſic not diſagreeable.

I had learned in my youth to play a little upon the ſpinet. Glumdalclitch kept one in her chamber, and a maſter attended twice a-week to teach her: I called it a ſpinet, becauſe it ſomewhat reſembled that inſtrument, and was played upon in the ſame manner. A fancy came into my head, that I would entertain the King and Queen with an Engliſh tune upon this inſtrument. But this appeared extremely difficult, for the ſpinet was near ſixty feet long, each key being almoſt a foot wide, ſo that with my arms extended I could no treach to above five keys, and to preſs them down required a good ſmart ſtroke with my fiſt, which would be too great a labour, and to no purpoſe. The method I contrived was this: I prepared two round ſticks about the bigneſs of common cudgels; they were thicker at one end than the other, and I covered the thicker end with a piece of a mouſe's ſkin, that, by rapping on them, I might neither damage the tops of the keys, nor interrupt the ſound. Before the ſpinet a bench was placed about four feet below the keys, and I was upon the bench. I ran ſideling upon it that way and this, as faſt

as I could, banging the proper keys with my two ſticks, and made a ſhift to play a jigg, to the great ſatisfaction of both their Majeſties: But it was the moſt violent exerciſe I ever underwent, and yet I could not ſtrike above ſixteen keys, nor conſequently play the baſe and treble together, as other artiſts do; which was a great diſadvantage to my performance.

The King, who, as I before obſerved, was a prince of excellent underſtanding, would frequently order that I ſhould be brought in a box, and ſet upon the table in his cloſet: He would then command me to bring one of my chairs out of the box, and ſit down within three yards diſtance upon the top of the cabinet, which brought me almoſt to a level with his face. In this manner I had ſeveral converſations with him. I one day took the freedom to tell his Majeſty, that the contempt he diſcovered towards Europe, and the reſt of the world, did not ſeem anſwerable to thoſe excellent qualities of mind that he was maſter of: That reaſon did not extend itſelf with the bulk of the body; on the contrary, we obſerved in our country, that the talleſt perſons were uſually leaſt provided with it: That among other animals, bees and ants had the reputation of more induſtry, art, and ſagacity, than many of the larger kinds; and that, as inconſiderable as he took me to be, I hoped I might live to do his Majeſty ſome ſignal ſervice. The King heard me with attention, and began to conceive a much better opinion of me than he had ever before.

fore. He desired I would give him as exact an account of the government of England, as I possibly could; because, as fond as princes commonly are of their own customs, (for so he conjectured of other monarchs by my former discourses) he should be glad to hear of any thing that might deserve imitation.

Imagine with thyself, courteous reader, how often I then wished for the tongue of Demosthenes or Cicero, that might have enabled me to celebrate the praise of my own dear native country in a style equal to its merits and felicity.

I began my discourse by informing his Majesty, that our dominions consisted of two islands, which composed three mighty kingdoms under one sovereign, besides our plantations in America. I dwelt long upon the fertility of our soil, and the temperature of our climate. I then spoke at large upon the constitution of an English parliament, partly made up of an illustrious body called the house of peers, persons of the noblest blood, and of the most antient and ample patrimonies. I described that extraordinary care always taken of their education in arts and arms, to qualify them for being counsellors both to the King and kingdom; to have a share in the legislature; to be members of the highest court of judicature, from whence there could be no appeal; and to be champions always ready for the defence of their prince and country, by their valour, conduct, and fidelity. That these were the ornament and bulwark of the kingdom, wor-

thy followers of their moſt renowned anceſtors, whoſe honour had been the reward of their virtue, from which their poſterity were never once known to degenerate. To theſe were joined ſeveral holy perſons, as part of that aſſembly, under the title of biſhops, whoſe peculiar buſineſs it is to take care of religion, and of thoſe who inſtruct the people therein. Theſe were ſearched and ſought out through the whole nation, by the prince and his wiſeſt counſellors, among ſuch of the prieſthood, as were moſt deſervedly diſtinguiſhed by the ſanctity of their lives, and the depth of their erudition, who were indeed the ſpiritual fathers of the clergy, and the people.

That the other part of the parliament conſiſted of an aſſembly called the houſe of commons, who were all principal gentlemen, *freely* picked and culled out by the people themſelves, for their great abilities and love of their country, to repreſent the wiſdom of the whole nation. And that theſe two bodies made up the moſt auguſt aſſembly in Europe, to whom, in conjunction with the prince, the whole legiſlature is committed.

I then deſcended to the courts of juſtice, over which the judges, thoſe venerable ſages and interpreters of the law, preſided for determining the diſputed rights and properties of men, as well as for the puniſhment of vice, and protection of innocence. I mentioned the prudent management of our treaſury, the valour and atchievements of our forces by ſea and land. I comput-

ed

umber of our people, by reckoning how
illions there might be of each religious
political party among us. I did not omit
r ſports and paſtimes, or any other par-
which I thought might redound to the
of my country. And I finiſhed all with
hiſtorical account of affairs and events in
l for about an hundred years paſt.

converſation was not ended under five
es, each of ſeveral hours; and the King
he whole with great attention, frequently
notes of what I ſpoke, as well as memo-
is of what queſtions he intended to aſk

n I had put an end to theſe long diſcour-
Majeſty, in a ſixth audience, conſulting
es, propoſed many doubts, queries and
ns upon every article. He aſked what
ls we uſed to cultivate the minds and bo-
our young nobility, and in what kind of
s they commonly ſpent the firſt and teach-
rt of their lives. What courſe was taken
ply that aſſembly when any noble family
extinct. What qualifications were neceſ-
thoſe who are to be created new lords:
er the humour of the prince, a ſum of
to a court lady or a prime miniſter, or a
of ſtrengthening a party oppoſite to the
intereſt, ever happened to be motives in
dvancements. What ſhare of knowledge
rds had in the laws of their country, and
ey came by it, ſo as to enable them to de-

cide

cide the properties of their fellow-ſubjects in the laſt reſort. Whether they were always ſo free from avarice, partialities, or want, that a bribe or ſome other ſiniſter view, could have no place among them. Whether thoſe holy lords I ſpoke of, were always promoted to that rank, upon account of their knowledge in religious matters, and the ſanctity of their lives; had never been compliers with the times while they were common prieſts, or ſlaviſh proſtitute chaplains to ſome nobleman, whoſe opinions they continued ſervilely to follow, after they were admitted into that aſſembly.

He then deſired to know, what arts were practiſed in electing thoſe whom I called commoners: Whether a ſtranger with a ſtrong purſe might not influence the vulgar voters to chuſe him before their own landlord, or the moſt conſiderable gentleman in the neighbourhood. How it came to paſs that people were ſo violently bent upon getting into this aſſembly, which I allowed to be a great trouble and expence, often to the ruin of their families, without any ſalary or penſion: Becauſe this appeared ſuch an exalted ſtrain of virtue and public ſpirit, that his Majeſty ſeemed to doubt it might poſſibly not be always ſincere: And he deſired to know, whether ſuch zealous gentlemen could have any views of refunding themſelves for the charges and trouble they were at, by ſacrificing the public good to the deſigns of a weak and vicious prince, in conjunction with a corrupted miniſtry. He multiplied

tiplied his queſtions, and ſifted me thoroughly upon every part of this head, propoſing numberleſs enquiries and objections, which I think it not prudent or convenient to repeat.

Upon what I ſaid in relation to our courts of juſtice, his Majeſty deſired to be ſatisfied in ſeveral points: And this I was the better able to do, having been formerly almoſt ruined by a long ſuit in chancery, which was decreed for me with coſts. He aſked what time was uſually ſpent in determining between right and wrong, and what degree of expence. Whether advocates and orators had liberty to plead in cauſes manifeſtly known to be unjuſt, vexatious, or oppreſſive. Whether party in religion or politics were obſerved to be of any weight in the ſcale of juſtice. Whether thoſe pleading orators were perſons educated in the general knowledge of equity, or only in provincial, national, and other local cuſtoms. Whether they or their judges had any part in penning thoſe laws, which they aſſumed the liberty of interpreting and gloſſing upon at their pleaſure. Whether they had ever at different times pleaded for and againſt the ſame cauſe, and cited precedents to prove contrary opinions. Whether they were a rich or poor corporation. Whether they received any pecuniary reward for pleading or delivering their opinions. And particularly, whether they were ever admitted as members in the lower ſenate.

He fell next upon the management of our treaſury; and ſaid, he thought my memory had failed

failed me, becauſe I computed our taxes at about five or ſix millions a-year; and, when I came to mention the iſſues, he found they ſometimes amounted to more than double: For the notes he had taken were very particular in this point, becauſe he hoped, as he told me, that the knowledge of our conduct might be uſeful to him, and he could not be deceived in his calculations. But, if what I told him were true, he was ſtill at a loſs how a kingdom could run out of its eſtate like a private perſon. He aſked me, who were our creditors; and where we found money to pay them. He wondered to hear me talk of ſuch chargeable and expenſive wars; that certainly we muſt be a quarrelſome people, or live among very bad neighbours, and that our generals muſt needs be richer than our kings. He aſked what buſineſs we had out of our own iſlands, unleſs upon the ſcore of trade or treaty, or to defend the coaſts with our fleet. Above all, he was amazed to hear me talk of a mercenary ſtanding army in the midſt of peace, and among a free people. He ſaid, if we were governed by our own conſent in the perſons of our repreſentatives, he could not imagine of whom we were afraid, or againſt whom we were to fight; and would hear my opinion, whether a private man's houſe might not better be defended by himſelf, his children, and family, than by half a dozen raſcals, picked up at a venture in the ſtreets for ſmall wages, who might get an hundred times more by cutting their throats.

He

He laughed at my odd kind of arithmetick (as he was pleaſed to call it) in reckoning the numbers of our people, by a computation drawn from the ſeveral ſects among us in religion and politics. He ſaid, he knew no reaſon why thoſe, who entertain opinions prejudicial to the public, ſhould be obliged to change, or ſhould not be obliged to conceal them. And as it was tyranny in any government to require the firſt, ſo it was weakneſs not to enforce the ſecond: For a man may be allowed to keep poiſons in his cloſet, but not to vend them about for cordials.

He obſerved, that among the diverſions of our nobility and gentry I had mentioned gaming; he deſired to know at what age this entertainment was uſually taken up, and when it was laid down: How much of their time it employed: Whether it ever went ſo high as to affect their fortunes: Whether mean vicious people, by their dexterity in that art, might not arrive at great riches, and ſometimes keep our very nobles in dependence, as well as habituate them, to vile companions, wholly take them from the improvement of their minds, and force them, by the loſſes they received, to learn and practiſe that infamous dexterity upon others.

He was perfectly aſtoniſhed with the hiſtorical account I gave him of our affairs during the laſt century, proteſting it was only a heap of conſpiracies, rebellions, murders, maſſacres, revolutions, baniſhments; the very worſt effects that avarice, faction, hypocriſy, perfidiouſneſs, cruel-

ty,

ty, rage, madneſs, hatred, envy, luſt, malice and ambition, could produce.

His Majeſty, in another audience, was at the pains to recapitulate the ſum of all I had ſpoken; compared the queſtions he made with the anſwers I had given: Then taking me into his hands, and ſtroaking me gently, delivered himſelf in theſe words, which I ſhall never forget, nor the manner he ſpoke them in: My little friend Grildrig, you have made a moſt admirable panegyric upon your country; you have clearly proved, that ignorance, idleneſs, and vice are the proper ingredients for qualifying a legiſlator; that laws are beſt explained, interpreted, and applied by thoſe whoſe intereſt and abilities lie in perverting, confounding, and eluding them. I obſerve among you ſome lines of an inſtitution, which in its original might have been tolerable, but theſe half eraſed, and the reſt wholly blurred and blotted by corruptions. It doth not appear from all you have ſaid, how any one perfection is required toward the procurement of any one ſtation among you; much leſs that men are ennobled on account of their virtue, that prieſts are advanced for their piety or learning, ſoldiers for their conduct or valour, judges for their integrity, ſenators for the love of their country, or counſellors for their wiſdom. As for yourſelf, continued the King, who have ſpent the greateſt part of your life in travelling, I am well diſpoſed to hope you may hitherto have eſcaped many vices of your country. But by what

what I have gathered from your own relation, and the anſwers I have with much pains wringed and extorted from you, I cannot but conclude the bulk of your natives to be the moſt pernicious race of little odious vermin, that nature ever ſuffered to crawl upon the ſurface of the earth.

CHAP. VII *.

The author's love of his country. He makes a propoſal of much advantage to the King, which is rejected. The King's great ignorance in politics. The learning of that country very imperfect and confined. The laws, and military affairs, and parties in the ſtate.

NOTHING but an extreme love of truth could have hindered me from concealing this part of my ſtory. It was in vain to diſcover my reſentments, which were always turned into ridicule; and I was forced to reſt with patience, while my noble and moſt beloved country was ſo

 injuriouſly

* This chapter contains ſuch ſarcaſms on the ſtructure of the human body, as too plainly ſhew, that the author was unwilling to loſe any opportunity of debaſing and ridiculing his own ſpecies.——Here a reflection naturally occurs, which, without any ſuperſtition, leads tacitly to admire and confeſs the ways of Providence. For this great genius, this mighty wit, who ſeemed to ſcoff at all mankind, lived not only to be an example to his own pride, and to terrify ours, but underwent the greateſt miſeries to which human nature is liable.——*See the author's life, prefixed to Vol. I.*

injuriouſly treated. I am as heartily ſorry as any of my readers can poſſibly be, that ſuch an occaſion was given: But this prince happened to be ſo curious and inquiſitive upon every particular, that it could not conſiſt either with gratitude or good manners, to refuſe giving him what ſatisfaction I was able. Yet thus much I may be allowed to ſay in my own vindication, that I artfully eluded many of his queſtions, and gave to every point a more favourable turn by many degrees than the ſtrictneſs of truth would allow. For I have always borne that laudable partiality to my own country, which Dionyſius Halicarnaſſenſis with ſo much juſtice recommends to an hiſtorian: I would hide the frailties and deformities of my political mother, and place her virtues and beauties in the moſt advantageous light. This was my ſincere endeavour in thoſe many diſcourſes I had with that monarch, although it unfortunately failed of ſucceſs.

But great allowances ſhould be given to a king who lives wholly ſecluded from the reſt of the world, and muſt therefore be altogether unacquainted with the manners and cuſtoms that moſt prevail in other nations: The want of which knowledge will ever produce many *prejudices*, and a certain *narrowneſs of thinking*, from which we and the politer countries of Europe are wholly exempted. And it would be hard indeed, if ſo remote a prince's notions of virtue and vice, were to be offered as a ſtandard for all mankind.

To

To confirm what I have now ſaid, and further to ſhew the miſerable effects of a *confined education*, I ſhall here inſert a paſſage which will hardly obtain belief. In hopes to ingratiate myſelf farther into his Majeſty's favour, I told him of an invention, diſcovered between three and four hundred years ago, to make a certain powder, into an heap of which the ſmalleſt ſpark of fire falling would kindle the whole in a moment, although it were as big as a mountain, and make it all fly up in the air together, with a noiſe and agitation greater than thunder. That a proper quantity of this powder rammed into an hollow tube of braſs or iron, according to its bigneſs, would drive a ball of iron or lead with ſuch violence and ſpeed, as nothing was able to ſuſtain its force. That the largeſt balls thus diſcharged would not only deſtroy whole ranks of an army at once, but batter the ſtrongeſt walls to the ground, ſink down ſhips with a thouſand men in each, to the bottom of the ſea; and when linked together by a chain, would cut through maſts and rigging, divide hundreds of bodies in the middle, and lay all waſte before them. That we often put this powder into large hollow balls of iron, and diſcharged them by an engine into ſome city we were beſieging, which would rip up the pavements, tear the houſes to pieces, burſt and throw ſplinters on every ſide, daſhing out the brains of all who came near. That I knew the ingredients very well, which were cheap and common; I underſtood the manner of com-

pounding them, and could direct his workmen how to make thoſe tubes of a ſize proportionable to all other things in his Majeſty's kingdom, and the largeſt need not be above an hundred feet long; twenty or thirty of which tubes, charged with the proper quantity of powder and balls, would batter down the walls of the ſtrongeſt town in his dominions in a few hours, or deſtroy the whole metropolis, if ever it ſhould pretend to diſpute his abſolute commands. This I humbly offered to his Majeſty, as a ſmall tribute of acknowlędgment in return of ſo many marks that I had received of his royal favour and protection.

The King was ſtruck with horror at the deſcription I had given of thoſe terrible engines, and the propoſal I had made. He was amazed, how ſo impotent and groveling an inſect as I (theſe were his expreſſions) could entertain ſuch inhuman ideas, and in ſo familiar a manner, as to appear wholly unmoved at all the ſcenes of blood and deſolation, which I had painted as the common effects of thoſe deſtructive machines, whereof he ſaid ſome evil genius, enemy to mankind, muſt have been the firſt contriver. As for himſelf, he proteſted, that although few things delighted him ſo much as new diſcoveries in art or in nature, yet he would rather loſe half his kingdom, than to be privy to ſuch a ſecret, which he commanded me, as I valued my life, never to mention any more.

A ſtrange effect of *narrow principles* and *ſhort views!* that a prince poſſeſſed of every quality which procures veneration, love, and eſteem; of ſtrong parts, great wiſdom, and profound learning, endowed with admirable talents for government, and almoſt adored by his ſubjects, ſhould, from a *nice unneceſſary ſcruple*, whereof in Europe we can have no conception, let ſlip an opportunity put into his hand that would have made him abſolute maſter of the lives, the liberties, and the fortunes of his people. Neither do I ſay this with the leaſt intention to detract from the many virtues of that excellent King, whoſe character I am ſenſible will on this account be very much leſſened in the opinion of an Engliſh reader; but I take this defect among them to have riſen from their ignorance, by not having hitherto reduced politics into a ſcience, as the more acute wits of Europe have done. For I remember very well, in a diſcourſe one day with the King, when I happened to ſay there were ſeveral thouſand books among us written upon the *art of government*, it gave him (directly contrary to my intention) a very mean opinion of our underſtandings. He profeſſed both to abominate and deſpiſe all *myſtery*, *refinement*, and *intrigue*, either in a prince or a miniſter. He could not tell what I meant by *ſecrets of ſtate*, where an enemy, or ſome rival nation, were not in the caſe. He confined the knowledge of governing within very narrow bounds, to common ſenſe and reaſon, to juſtice and lenity, to the ſpeedy

determination of civil and criminal cauſes; with ſome other obvious topics, which are not worth conſidering. And he gave it for his opinion, that whoever could make two ears of corn, or two blades of graſs, to grow upon a ſpot of ground where only one grew before, would deſerve better of mankind, and do more eſſential ſervice to his country, than the whole race of politicians put together.

The learning of this people is very defective, conſiſting only in morality, hiſtory, poetry, and mathematics, wherein they muſt be allowed to excel. But the laſt of theſe is wholly applied to what may be uſeful in life, to the improvement of agriculture, and all mechanical arts; ſo that among us it would be little eſteemed. And as to ideas, entities, abſtractions, and tranſcendentals, I could never drive the leaſt conception into their heads.

No law of that country muſt exceed in words the number of letters in their alphabet, which conſiſts only of two and twenty. But indeed few of them extend even to that length. They are expreſſed in the moſt plain and ſimple terms, wherein thoſe people are not mercurial enough to diſcover above one interpretation: And to write a comment upon any law is a capital crime. As to the deciſion of civil cauſes, or proceedings againſt criminals, their precedents are ſo few, that they have little reaſon to boaſt of any extraordinary ſkill in either.

They

They have had the art of printing as well as the Chineſe, time out of mind: But their libraries are not very large; for that of the King, which is reckoned the largeſt, doth not amount to above a thouſand volumes, placed in a gallery of twelve hundred feet long, from whence I had liberty to borrow what books I pleaſed. The Queen's joiner had contrived in one of Glumdalclitch's rooms a kind of wooden machine five and twenty feet high, formed like a ſtanding ladder, the ſteps were each fifty feet long: It was indeed a moveable pair of ſtairs, the loweſt end placed at ten feet diſtance from the wall of the chamber. The book I had a mind to read was put up leaning againſt the wall; I firſt mounted to the upper ſtep of the ladder, and turning my face towards the book, began at the top of the page, and ſo walking to the right and left about eight or ten paces, according to the length of the lines, till I had gotten a little below the level of mine eyes, and then deſcending gradually till I came to the bottom: after which I mounted again, and began the other page in the ſame manner, and ſo turned over the leaf, which I could eaſily do with both my hands, for it was as thick and ſtiff as a paſte-board, and in the largeſt folios not above eighteen or twenty feet long.

Their ſtyle is clear, maſculine, and ſmooth, but not florid; for they avoid nothing more than multiplying unneceſſary words, or uſing various expreſſions. I have peruſed many of their books, eſpecially

eſpecially thoſe in hiſtory and morality. Among the reſt, I was much diverted with a little old treatiſe, which always lay in Glumdalclitch's bed-chamber, and belonged to her governeſs, a grave elderly gentlewoman, who dealt in writings of morality and devotion. The book treats of the weakneſs of human kind, and is in little eſteem except among the women and the vulgar. However, I was curious to ſee what an author of that country could ſay upon ſuch a ſubject. This writer went through all the uſual topics of European moraliſts, ſhewing how diminutive, contemptible, and helpleſs an animal was man in his own nature; how unable to defend himſelf from inclemencies of the air, or the fury of wild beaſts: How much he was excelled by one creature in ſtrength, by another in ſpeed, by a third in foreſight, by a fourth in induſtry. He added, that nature was degenerated in theſe latter declining ages of the world, and could now produce only ſmall abortive births, in compariſon of thoſe in ancient times. He ſaid, it was very reaſonable to think, not only that the ſpecies of men were originally much larger, but alſo that there muſt have been giants in former ages; which, as it is aſſerted by hiſtory and tradition, ſo it hath been confirmed by huge bones and ſkulls, caſually dug up in ſeveral parts of the kingdom, far exceeding the common dwindled race of man in our days. He argued, that the very laws of nature abſolutely required we ſhould have been made in the beginning of a ſize more large and robuſt, not ſo liable

liable to deſtruction from every little accident of a tile falling from an houſe, or a ſtone caſt from the hand of a boy, or being drowned in a little brook. From this way of reaſoning, the author drew ſeveral moral applications uſeful in the conduct of life, but needleſs here to repeat. For my own part, I could not avoid reflecting how univerſally this talent was ſpread, of drawing lectures in morality, or indeed rather matter of diſcontent and repining, from the quarrels we raiſe with nature. And, I believe, upon a ſtrict enquiry, thoſe quarrels might be ſhewn as ill-grounded among us, as they are among that people *.

As to their military affairs, they boaſt that the King's army conſiſts of an hundred and ſeventy-ſix thouſand foot, and thirty-two thouſand horſe; if that may be called an army, which is made up of tradeſmen in the ſeveral cities, and farmers in the country, whoſe commanders are only the nobility and gentry, without pay or reward. They are indeed perfect enough in their exerciſes, and under very good diſcipline, wherein I ſaw no great merit; for how ſhould it be otherwiſe, where every farmer is under the command of his own landlord, and every citizen under

* The author's zeal to juſtify Providence has before been remarked; and theſe quarrels with Nature, or, in other words, with God, could not have been more forcibly reproved, than by ſhewing, that the complaints upon which they are founded, would be equally ſpecious among beings of ſuch aſtoniſhing ſuperiority of ſtature and ſtrength. *Hawkeſ.*

der that of the principal men in his own city, choſen after the manner of Venice, by *ballot*.

I have often ſeen the militia of Lorbrulgrud drawn out to exerciſe in a great field near the city of twenty miles ſquare. They were in all not above twenty-five thouſand foot and ſix thouſand horſe: But it was impoſſible for me to compute their number, conſidering the ſpace of ground they took up. A cavalier, mounted on a large ſteed, might be about ninety feet high. I have ſeen this whole body of horſe, upon a word of command, draw their ſwords at once, and brandiſh them in the air. Imagination can figure nothing ſo grand, ſo ſurpriſing, and ſo aſtoniſhing! it looked as if ten thouſand flaſhes of lightning were darting at the ſame time from every quarter of the ſky.

I was curious to know how this prince, to whoſe dominions there is no acceſs from any other country, came to think of armies, or to teach his people the practice of military diſcipline. But I was ſoon informed, both by converſation, and reading their hiſtories: For in the courſe of many ages they have been troubled with the ſame diſeaſe to which the whole race of mankind is ſubject; the nobility often contending for power, the people for liberty, and the King for abſolute dominion. All which, however happily tempered by the laws of that kingdom, have been ſometimes violated by each of the three parties, and have more than once occaſioned civil wars, the laſt whereof was happily put an end to by this prince's

prince's grandfather in a general compoſition; and the militia, then ſettled with common conſent, hath been ever ſince kept in the ſtricteſt duty.

CHAP. VIII*.

The King and Queen make a progreſs to the frontiers. The author attends them. The manner in which he leaves the country very particularly related. He returns to England.

I Had always a ſtrong impulſe, that I ſhould ſome time recover my liberty, though it was impoſſible to conjecture by what means, or to form any project with the leaſt hope of ſucceeding. The ſhip in which I ſailed was the firſt ever known to be driven within ſight of that coaſt, and the King had given ſtrict orders, that if at any time another appeared, it ſhould be taken aſhore; and with all its crew and paſſengers brought in a tumbril to Lorbrulgrud. He was ſtrongly bent to get me a woman of my own ſize, by whom I might propagate the breed: But I think I ſhould rather have died, than undergone the diſgrace of leaving a poſterity, to be kept in cages like tame canary birds, and perhaps in time ſold about

* Gulliver's eſcape from Brobdingnag is humourous, ſatirical, and decent. *Orrery.*

about the kingdom to perſons of quality for curioſities. I was indeed treated with much kindneſs: I was the favourite of a great King and Queen, and the delight of the whole court; but it was upon ſuch a foot, as ill became the dignity of human kind. I could never forget thoſe domeſtic pledges I had left behind me. I wanted to be among people with whom I could converſe upon even terms, and walk about the ſtreets and fields, without being afraid of being trod to death like a frog, or a young puppy. But my deliverance came ſooner than I expected, and in a manner not very common: The whole ſtory and circumſtances of which I ſhall faithfully relate.

I had now been two years in this country; and about the beginning of the third, Glumdalclitch and I attended the King and Queen in a progreſs to the *ſouth* coaſt of that kingdom. I was carried as uſual in my travelling-box, which, as I have already deſcribed, was a very convenient cloſet of twelve feet wide. And I had ordered a hammock to be fixed by ſilken ropes from the four corners at the top, to break the jolts when a ſervant carried me before him on horſeback, as I ſometimes deſired, and would often ſleep in my hammock while we were upon the road. On the roof of my cloſet, not directly over the middle of the hammock, I ordered the joiner to cut out a hole of a foot ſquare, to give me air in hot weather, as I ſlept; which hole I ſhut at pleaſure with a board, that drew backwards and forwards through a groove.

When we came to our journey's end, the King thought proper to paſs a few days at a palace he hath near Flanflaſnic, a city within eighteen Engliſh miles of the ſea-ſide. Glumdalclitch and I were much fatigued: I had gotten a ſmall cold, but the poor girl was ſo ill as to be confined to her chamber. I longed to ſee the ocean, which muſt be the only ſcene of my eſcape, if ever it ſhould happen. I pretended to be worſe than I really was, and deſired leave to take the freſh air of the ſea with a page, whom I was very fond of, and who had ſometimes been truſted with me. I ſhall never forget with what unwillingneſs Glumdalclitch conſented, nor the ſtrict charge ſhe gave the page to be careful of me, burſting at the ſame time into a flood of tears, as if ſhe had ſome foreboding of what was to happen. The boy took me out in my box about half an hour's walk from the palace towards the rocks on the ſea-ſhore. I ordered him to ſet me down, and lifting up one of my ſaſhes, caſt many a wiſhful melancholy look towards the ſea. I found myſelf not very well, and told the page that I had a mind to take a nap in my hammock, which I hoped would do me good. I got in, and the boy ſhut the window cloſe down to keep out the cold. I ſoon fell aſleep; and all I can conjecture is, that while I ſlept, the page, thinking no danger could happen, went among the rocks to look for birds eggs, having before obſerved him from my window ſearching about, and picking up one or two in the clefts. Be that as it will, I found myſelf ſud-

denly awaked with a violent pull upon the ring, which was faſtened at the top of my box for the conveniency of carriage. I felt my box raiſed very high in the air, and then borne forward with prodigious ſpeed. The firſt jolt had like to have ſhaken me out of my hammock, but afterwards the motion was eaſy enough. I called out ſeveral times, as loud as I could raiſe my voice; but all to no purpoſe. I looked towards my windows, and could ſee nothing but the clouds and ſky. I heard a noiſe juſt over my head like the clapping of wings, and then began to perceive the woeful condition I was in, that ſome eagle had got the ring of my box in his beak, with an intent to let it fall upon a rock, like a tortoiſe in a ſhell, and then pick out my body, and devour it: For the ſagacity and ſmell of this bird enabled him to diſcover his quarry at a great diſtance, though better concealed than I could be within a two-inch board.

In a little time I obſerved the noiſe and flutter of wings to increaſe very faſt, and my box was toſſed up and down like a ſign in a windy day. I heard ſeveral bangs or buffets, as I thought, given to the eagle (for ſuch I am certain it muſt have been that held the ring of my box in his beak) and then all on a ſudden felt myſelf falling perpendicularly down for above a minute, but with ſuch incredible ſwiftneſs that I almoſt loſt my breath. My fall was ſtopped by a terrible ſquaſh, that ſounded louder to my ears than the

cataract

cataract of Niagara *; after which I was quite in the dark for another minute, and then my box began to riſe ſo high that I could ſee light from the tops of the windows. I now perceived that I was fallen into the ſea. My box, by the weight of my body, and the goods that were in, and the broad plates of iron fixed for ſtrength at the four corners of the top and bottom, floated about five feet depth in water. I did then, and do now ſuppoſe, that the eagle which flew away with my box was purſued by two or three others, and forced to let me drop while he defended himſelf againſt the reſt, who hoped to ſhare in the prey. The plates of iron faſtened at the bottom of the box (for thoſe were the ſtrongeſt) preſerved the balance while it fell, and hindered it from being broken on the ſurface of the water. Every joint of it was well grooved; and the door did not move on hinges, but up and down like a ſaſh, which kept my cloſet ſo tight that very little water came in. I got with much difficulty out of my hammock, having firſt ventured to draw back the ſlip-board on the roof already mentioned, contrived on purpoſe to let in air, for want of which I found myſelf almoſt ſtifled.

* Niagara is a ſettlement of the French in North America, and the cataract is produced by the fall of a conflux of water (formed of the four vaſt lakes of Canada) from a rocky precipice, the perpendicular height of which is one hundred and thirty-ſeven feet; and it is ſaid to have been heard fifteen leagues. *Hawkeſ.*

How often did I then wiſh myſelf with my dear Glumdalclitch, from whom one ſingle hour had ſo far divided me! And I may ſay with truth, that in the midſt of my own misfortunes I could not forbear lamenting my poor nurſe, the grief ſhe would ſuffer for my loſs, the diſpleaſure of the Queen, and the ruin of her fortune. Perhaps many travellers have not been under greater difficulties and diſtreſs than I was at this juncture, expecting every moment to ſee my body daſhed to pieces, or at leaſt overſet by the firſt violent blaſt or riſing wave. A breach in one ſingle pane of glaſs would have been immediate death; nor could any thing have preſerved the windows but the ſtrong lattice-wires placed on the outſide againſt accidents in travelling. I ſaw the water ooze in at ſeveral crannies, although the leaks were not conſiderable, and I endeavoured to ſtop them as well as I could. I was not able to lift up the roof of my cloſet, which otherwiſe I certainly ſhould have done, and ſat on the top of it, where I might at leaſt preſerve myſelf ſome hours longer than by being ſhut up (as I may call it) in the hold. Or if I eſcaped theſe dangers for a day or two, what could I expect but a miſerable death of cold and hunger? I was four hours under theſe circumſtances, expecting, and indeed wiſhing every moment to be my laſt.

I have already told the reader, that there were two ſtrong ſtaples fixed upon that ſide of my box which had no window, and into which the ſervant

vant who uſed to carry me on horſeback would put a leathern belt, and buckle it about his waiſt. Being in this diſconſolate ſtate, I heard, or at leaſt thought I heard, ſome kind of grating noiſe on that ſide of my box where the ſtaples were fixed; and ſoon after I began to fancy, that the box was pulled or towed along in the ſea, for I now and then felt a ſort of tugging, which made the waves riſe near the tops of my windows, leaving me almoſt in the dark. This gave me ſome faint hopes of relief; although I was not able to imagine how it could be brought about. I ventured to unſcrew one of my chairs, which were always faſtened to the floor; and having made a hard ſhift to ſcrew it down again directly under the ſlipping-board that I had lately opened, I mounted on the chair, and putting my mouth as near as I could to the hole, I called for help in a loud voice, and in all the languages I underſtood. I then faſtened my handkerchief to a ſtick I uſually carried, and thruſting it up the hole, waved it ſeveral times in the air, that if any boat or ſhip were near, the ſeamen might conjecture ſome unhappy mortal to be ſhut up in the box.

I found no effect from all I could do, but plainly perceived my cloſet to be moved along; and in the ſpace of an hour, or better, that ſide of the box where the ſtaples were, and had no window, ſtruck againſt ſomething that was hard. I apprehended it to be a rock, and found myſelf toſſed more than ever. I plainly heard a noiſe

upon the cover of my cloſet, like that of a cable, and the grating of it as it paſſed through the ring. I then found myſelf hoiſted up by degrees at leaſt three feet higher than I was before. Whereupon I again thruſt up my ſtick and handkerchief, calling for help till I was almoſt hoarſe. In return to which, I heard a great ſhout repeated three times, giving me ſuch tranſports of joy as are not to be conceived but by thoſe who feel them. I now heard a trampling over my head, and ſomebody calling through the hole with a loud voice in the Engliſh tongue, If there be any body below, let them ſpeak. I anſwered I was an Engliſhman, drawn by ill fortune into the greateſt calamity that ever any creature underwent, and begged by all that was moving, to be delivered out of the dungeon I was in. The voice replied I was ſafe, for my box was faſtened to their ſhip; and the carpenter ſhould immediately come and ſaw a hole in the cover large enough to pull me out. I anſwered, that was needleſs, and would take up too much time, for there was no more to be done, but let one of the crew put his finger into the ring, and take the box out of the ſea into the ſhip, and ſo into the captain's cabin *. Some of them, upon hearing me talk ſo wildly,

* There are ſeveral little incidents which ſhew the author to have had a deep knowledge of human nature; and I think this is one. Although the principal advantages enumerated by Gulliver in the beginning of this chapter, of mingling again among his countrymen, depended on their being of the ſame ſize with himſelf; yet this is forgotten, in his ardour to be delivered: And he is afterwards betrayed into the ſame abſurdity by his zeal to preſerve his furniture. *Hawkeſ.*

wildly, thought I was mad; others laughed; for indeed it never came into my head that I was now got among people of my own ſtature and ſtrength. The carpenter came, and in a few minutes ſawed a paſſage about four feet ſquare, then let down a ſmall ladder, upon which I mounted, and from thence was taken into the ſhip in a very weak condition.

The ſailors were all in amazement, and aſked me a thouſand queſtions, which I had no inclination to anſwer. I was equally confounded at the ſight of ſo many pigmies, for ſuch I took them to be, after having ſo long accuſtomed mine eyes to the monſtrous objects I had left. But the captain, Mr Thomas Wilcocks, an honeſt worthy Shropſhire man, obſerving I was ready to faint, took me into his cabbin gave me a cordial to comfort me, and made me *turn in* upon his own bed, adviſing me to take a little reſt, of which I had great need. Before I went to ſleep, I gave him to underſtand that I had ſome valuable furniture in my box too good to be loſt; a fine hammock, an handſome field-bed, two chairs, a table, and a cabinet. That my cloſet was hung on all ſides, or rather quilted, with ſilk and cotton: That if he would let one of the crew bring my cloſet into his cabbin, I I would open it there before him, and ſhew him my goods. The captain hearing me utter theſe abſurdities, concluded I was raving: However (I ſuppoſe to pacify me) he promiſed to give order as I deſired, and going upon deck, ſent

ſome

ſome of his men down into my cloſet, from whence (as I afterwards found) they drew up all my goods, and ſtripped off the quilting: But the chairs, cabinet, and bedſtead, being ſcrewed to the floor, were much damaged by the ignorance of the ſeamen, who tore them up by force. Then they knocked off ſome of the boards for the uſe of the ſhip; and when they had got all they had a mind for, let the hull drop into the ſea, which, by reaſon of many breaches made in the bottom and ſides, ſunk to rights. And indeed I was glad not to have been a ſpectator of the havock they made; becauſe I am confident it would have ſenſibly touched me, by bringing former paſſages into my mind, which I had rather forget.

I ſlept ſome hours, but perpetually diſturbed with dreams of the place I had left, and the dangers I had eſcaped. However, upon waking, I found myſelf much recovered. It was now about eight o'clock at night, and the captain ordered ſupper immediately, thinking I had already faſted too long. He entertained me with great kindneſs, obſerving me not to look wildly, or talk inconſiſtently; and, when we were left alone, deſired I would give him a relation of my travels, and by what accident I came to be ſet adrift in that monſtrous wooden cheſt. He ſaid, that about twelve o'clock at noon, as he was looking through his glaſs, he ſpied it at a diſtance, and thought it was a ſail, which he had a mind to make, being not much out of his courſe,

courſe, in hopes of buying ſome biſcuit, his own beginning to fall ſhort. That upon coming nearer, and finding his error, he ſent out his long-boat to diſcover what I was; that his men came back in a fright, ſwearing that they had ſeen a ſwimming houſe. That he laughed at their folly, and went himſelf in the boat, ordering his men to take a ſtrong cable along with them. That the weather being calm he rowed round me ſeveral times, obſerved my windows, and the wire-lattices that defended them. That he diſcovered two ſtaples upon one ſide, which was all of boards, without any paſſage for light. He then commanded his men to row up to that ſide, and faſtening a cable to one of the ſtaples, ordered them to tow my cheſt (as they called it) towards the ſhip. When it was there, he gave directions to faſten another cable to the ring fixed in the cover, and to raiſe up my cheſt with pullies, which all the ſailors were not able to do above two or three feet. He ſaid, they ſaw me ſtick an handkerchief thruſt out of the hole, and concluded that ſome unhappy man muſt be ſhut up in the cavity. I aſked whether he or the crew had ſeen any prodigious birds in the air about the time he firſt diſcovered me? To which he anſwered, that, diſcourſing this matter with the ſailors while I was aſleep, one of them ſaid, he had *obſerved* three eagles flying towards the *north*; but remarked nothing of their being larger than the uſual ſize, which I ſuppoſe muſt be imputed to the great height they were at; and he could

not gueſs the reaſon of my queſtion. I then aſked the captain, how far he reckoned we might be from land? He ſaid, by the beſt computation he could make, we were at leaſt an hundred leagues. I aſſured him he muſt be miſtaken by almoſt half, for I had not left the country from whence I came above two hours before I dropt into the ſea. Whereupon he began again to think that my brain was diſturbed, of which he gave me a hint, and adviſed me to go to bed in a cabbin he had provided. I aſſured him I was well refreſhed with his good entertainment and company, and as much in my ſenſes as ever I was in my life. He then grew ſerious, and deſired me to ſpeak freely, whether I were not troubled in mind by the conſciouſneſs of ſome enormous crime, for which I was puniſhed at the command of ſome prince, by expoſing me in that cheſt, as great criminals in other countries have been forced to ſea in a leaky veſſel without proviſions: For although he ſhould be ſorry to have taken ſo ill a man into his ſhip, yet he would engage his word to ſet me ſafe aſhore in the firſt port where we arrived. He added, that his ſuſpicions were much increaſed by ſome very abſurd ſpeeches I had delivered at firſt to the ſailors, and afterwards to himſelf, in relation to my cloſet or cheſt, as well as by my odd looks and behaviour while I was at ſupper.

I begged his patience to hear me tell my ſtory, which I faithfully did from the laſt time I left England to the moment he firſt diſcovered me;

And as truth always forceth its way into rational minds, ſo this honeſt worthy gentleman, who had ſome tincture of learning, and very good ſenſe, was immediately convinced of my candour and veracity. But, farther to confirm all I had ſaid, I entreated him to give order that my cabinet ſhould be brought, of which I had the key in my pocket, (for he had already informed me how the ſeamen diſpoſed of my cloſet). I opened it in his own preſence, and ſhewed him the ſmall collection of rarities I made in the country from whence I had been ſo ſtrangely delivered. There was the comb I had contrived out of the ſtumps of the King's beard, and another of the ſame materials, but fixed into a paring of her Majeſty's thumb-nail, which ſerved for the back. There was a collection of needles and pins, from a foot to half a yard long; four waſp-ſtings, like joiners tacks; ſome combings of the Queen's hair; a gold ring, which one day ſhe made me a preſent of in a moſt obliging manner, taking it from her little finger, and throwing it over my head like a collar. I deſired the captain would pleaſe to accept this ring in return of his civilities; which he abſolutely refuſed. I ſhewed him a corn that I had cut off with my own hand from a maid of honour's toe; it was about the bigneſs of a Kentiſh pippin, and grown ſo hard, that, when I returned to England, I got it hollowed into a cup, and ſet in ſilver. Laſtly, I deſired him to ſee the breeches I had then on, which were made of a mouſe's ſkin.

I could force nothing on him but a footman's tooth, which I obſerved him to examine with great curioſity, and found he had a fancy for it. He received it with abundance of thanks, more than ſuch a trifle could deſerve. It was drawn by an unſkilful ſurgeon, in a miſtake, from one of Glumdalclitch's men, who was afflicted with the tooth-ach; but it was as ſound as any in his head. I got it cleaned, and put into my cabinet. It was about a foot long, and four inches in diameter.

The captain was very well ſatisfied with this plain relation I had given him, and ſaid, he hoped, when we returned to England, I would oblige the world by putting it on paper, and making it public. My anſwer was, that I thought we were already overſtocked with books of travels: That nothing could now paſs which was not extraordinary; wherein I doubted ſome authors leſs conſulted truth, than their own vanity or intereſt, or the diverſion of ignorant readers: That my ſtory could contain little beſides common events, without thoſe ornamental deſcriptions of ſtrange plants, trees, birds, and other animals; or of the barbarous cuſtoms and idolatry of ſavage people, with which moſt writers abound. However, I thanked him for his good opinion, and promiſed to take the matter into my thoughts.

He ſaid, he wondered at one thing very much, which was, to hear me ſpeak ſo loud, aſking me whether the King or Queen of that country were

thick of hearing. I told him, it was what I had been uſed to for above two years paſt; and that I admired as much at the voices of him and his men, who ſeemed to me only to whiſper, and yet I could hear them well enough. But, when I ſpoke in that country, it was like a man talking in the ſtreet to another looking out from the top of a ſteeple, unleſs when I was placed on a table, or held in any perſon's hand. I told him, I had likewiſe obſerved another thing, that when I firſt got into the ſhip, and the ſailors ſtood all about me, I thought they were the moſt little contemptible creatures I had ever beheld. For indeed, while I was in that prince's country, I could never endure to look in a glaſs, after mine eyes had been accuſtomed to ſuch prodigious objects, becauſe the compariſon gave me ſo deſpicable a conceit of myſelf. The captain ſaid, that while we were at ſupper he obſerved me to look at every thing with a ſort of wonder, and that I often ſeemed hardly able to contain my laughter, which he knew not well how to take, but imputed it to ſome diſorder in my brain. I anſwered, it was very true; and I wondered how I could forbear, when I ſaw his diſhes of the ſize of a ſilver threepence, a leg of pork hardly a mouthful, a cup not ſo big as a nut-ſhell; and ſo I went on, deſcribing the reſt of his houſehold ſtuff and proviſions after the ſame manner. For although the Queen had ordered a little equipage of all things neceſſary for me, while I was in her ſervice, yet my ideas were wholly taken up with what I ſaw

on every ſide of me, and I winked at my own littleneſs, as people do at their own faults. The captain underſtood my raillery very well, and merrily replied with the old Engliſh proverb, that he doubted mine eyes were bigger than my belly, for he did not obſerve my ſtomach ſo good, although I had faſted all day; and, continuing his mirth, proteſted he would have given an hundred pounds to have ſeen my cloſet in the eagle's bill, and afterwards in its fall from ſo great a height into the ſea; which would certainly have been a moſt aſtoniſhing object, worthy to have the deſcription of it tranſmitted to future ages: And the compariſon of Phaëton was ſo obvious, that he could not forbear applying it, although I did not much admire the conceit.

The captain, having been at Tonquin, was in his return to England driven north-eaſtward to the latitude of 44 degrees, and of longitude 143. But meeting a trade-wind two days after I came on board him, we ſailed ſouthward a long time, and coaſting New-Holland, kept our courſe weſt-ſouth-weſt, and then ſouth-ſouth-weſt, till we doubled the Cape of Good-Hope. Our voyage was very proſperous; but I ſhall not trouble the reader with a journal of it. The captain called in at one or two ports, and ſent in his long-boat for proviſions and freſh water; but I never went out of the ſhip till we came into the Downs, which was on the third day of June 1706, about nine months after my eſcape. I offered to leave my goods in ſecurity for payment of my freight;

but the captain proteſted he would not receive one farthing. We took a kind leave of each other, and I made him promiſe he would come to ſee me at my houſe in Redriff. I hired a horſe and guide for five ſhillings, which I borrowed of the captain.

As I was on the road, obſerving the littleneſs of the houſes, the trees, the cattle, and the people, I began to think myſelf in Lilliput. I was afraid of trampling on every traveller I met, and often called aloud to have them ſtand out of the way, ſo that I had like to have gotten one or two broken heads for my impertinence.

When I came to my own houſe, for which I was forced to enquire, one of the ſervants opening the door, I bent down to go in (like a gooſe under a gate) for fear of ſtriking my head. My wife ran out to embrace me; but I ſtooped lower than her knees, thinking ſhe could otherwiſe never be able to reach my mouth. My daughter kneeled to aſk my bleſſing, but I could not ſee her till ſhe aroſe, having been ſo long uſed to ſtand with my head and eyes erect to above ſixty feet; and then I went to take her up with one hand by the waiſt. I looked down upon the ſervants, and one or two friends who were in the houſe, as if they had been pigmies, and I a giant. I told my wife ſhe had been too thrifty, for I found ſhe had ſtarved herſelf and her daughter to nothing. In ſhort, I behaved myſelf ſo unaccountably, that they were all of the captain's opinion when he firſt ſaw me, and concluded I had

loſt my wits. This I mention as an inſtance c the great power of habit and prejudice.

In a little time, I and my family and friend came to a right underſtanding; but my wife prc teſted I ſhould never go to ſea any more; a though my evil deſtiny ſo ordered, that ſhe ha not power to hinder me, as the reader may kno hereafter. In the mean time, I here conclud the ſecond part of my unfortunate voyages *.

PAR

* From the whole of theſe two voyages to Lilliput and Bro dingnag, ariſes one general remark, which, however obvio has been overlooked by thoſe who conſider them as little mc than the ſport of a wanton imagination. When human actio are aſcribed to pigmies and giants, there are few that do n excite either contempt, diſguſt, or horror. To aſcribe the therefore to ſuch beings, was perhaps the moſt probable meth of engaging the mind to examine them with attention, a judge of them with impartiality, by ſuſpending the faſcinati of habit, and exhibiting familiar objects in a new light. The u of the fable then is not leſs apparent, than important and e tenſive; and that this uſe was intended by the author, can doubted only by thoſe who are diſpoſed to affirm, that ord and regularity are the effects of chance. *Hawkeſ.*

Upon reading over the two firſt parts of theſe travels, I thi that I can diſcover a very great reſemblance between certa paſſages in Gulliver's voyage to Lilliput, and the voyage of C rano de Bergerac to the ſun and moon.——Cyrano de Berga is a French author of a ſingular character, who had a very pec liar turn of wit and humour, in many reſpects reſembling th of Swift. He wanted the advantages of learning, and a regul education. His imagination was leſs guarded and correct, b more agreeably extravagant. He has introduced into his phil ſophical romance, the ſyſtem of Deſcartes, (which was th much admired), intermixed with ſeveral fine ſtrokes of juſt i tire on the wild and immechanical enquiries of the philoſophe and aſtronomers of that age; and in many parts he has evider *ly directed* the plan which the Dean of St Patrick's has purſue *Orrery.*

PART III.

A VOYAGE TO LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAG, GLUBBDUBDRIB, and JAPAN *.

CHAP. I.

The author ſets out on his third voyage, is taken by pirates. The malice of a Dutchman. *His arrival at an iſland. He is received into* Laputa.

I HAD not been at home above ten days, when Captain William Robinſon, a Corniſhman, commander of the Hope-well, a ſtout ſhip of three hundred tuns, came to my houſe. I had formerly been ſurgeon of another ſhip, where

* The third part is in general written againſt chemiſts, mathematicians, mechanics, and projectors of all kinds.

Swift was little acquainted with mathematical knowledge, and was prejudiced againſt it, by obſerving the ſtrange effects it produced in thoſe who applied themſelves entirely to that ſcience. No part of human literature has given greater ſtrength to the mind, or has produced greater benefits to mankind, than the ſeveral branches of learning that may paſs under the general denomination of mathematics. But the abuſes of this ſtudy, the idle

where he was maſter and a fourth part owner, in a voyage to the Levant; he had always treated me more like a brother, than an inferior officer, and,

idle, thin, immechanical refinements of it, are juſt ſubjects of ſatire. The real uſe of knowledge is to invigorate, not to enervate the faculties of reaſon. Learning degenerates into a ſpecies of madneſs, when it is not ſuperior to what it poſſeſſeth. The ſcientific powers are moſt evident, when they are capable of exerting themſelves in the ſocial duties of life; when they wear no chains, but can freely diſengage themſelves, and, like a ſound conſtitution of body, riſe chearful, and more vigorous by the food they have acquired, being neither oppreſſed, nor rendered ſtupid by the labours of digeſtion.

Lord Bacon has juſtly expoſed the vain purſuits of oſtentatious pedants in the different parts of learning; and their unaccountable temerity in deducing general rules from arbitrary maxims, or few experiments: He has likewiſe fixed upon a ſure and certain baſis, the procedure and limits of the human underſtanding. Swift has purſued the ſame plan in a different manner, and has placed the imaginary ſchemes of all pretenders, in a more ludicrous, and therefore in a more proper light.

Ridiculum acri
Fortius ac melius, magnas plerumque ſecat res.

He cannot be ſuppoſed to condemn uſeful experiments, or the right application of them: But he ridicules the vain attempts and irregular productions of thoſe raſh men, who, like Ixion, embracing a cloud inſtead of a goddeſs, plagued the world with Centaurs; whilſt Jupiter, from the embraces of a Juno, and an Alcmena, bleſſed the earth with an Hebe, and an Hercules. *Orrery.*

The deſign of Gulliver in his voyage to Laputa, is to ridicule the vain pretenſions of chemiſts, mathematicians, projectors, and the reſt of that ſpeculative tribe, who ſpend their time in aerial ſtudies, by no means calculated to improve the faculties of the mind, or to enlarge the number of ideas; mathematicians (I mean thoſe only who are entirely devoted to their circles, their

teleſcopes,

Unknown
Straits of
Land
Companys
Land.
Slats I.
Urie
Lasuda
Balnibarbi
Discover'd
A.D. 1701.
Lugnagg
Chumegnig
Glundrubdrib
Ucac
Timul
A. Bell Sculp.

He ſaid ſo many other obliging things, and I knew him to be ſo honeſt a man, that I could not reject his propoſal; the thirſt I had of ſeeing the world, notwithſtanding my paſt misfortunes, continuing as violent as ever. The only difficulty that remained, was to perſuade my wife, whoſe conſent however I at laſt obtained, by the proſpect of advantage ſhe propoſed to her children.

We ſet out the 5th day of Auguſt 1706, and arrived at Fort St George the 11th of April 1707. We ſtaied there three weeks to refreſh our crew, many of whom were ſick. From thence we went to Tonquin, where the captain reſolved to continue ſome time, becauſe many of the goods he intended to buy were not ready, nor could he expect to be diſpatched in ſeveral months. Therefore, in hopes to defray ſome of the charges he muſt be at, he bought a ſloop, loaded it with ſeveral ſorts of goods, wherewith the Tonquineſe uſually trade to the neighbouring iſlands, and putting fourteen men on board, whereof three were of the country, he appointed me maſter of the ſloop, and gave me power to traffic, while he tranſacted his affairs at Tonquin.

We had not ſailed above three days, when, a great ſtorm ariſing, we were driven five days to the north-north-eaſt, and then to the eaſt; after which we had fair weather, but ſtill with a pretty ſtrong gale from the weſt. Upon the tenth day we were chaced by two pirates, who ſoon overtook

took us; for my ſloop was ſo deep laden, that ſhe ſailed very ſlow, neither were we in a condition to defend ourſelves.

We were boarded about the ſame time by both the pirates, who entered furiouſly at the head of their men; but finding us all proſtrate upon our faces (for ſo I gave order) they pinioned us with ſtrong ropes, and, ſetting a guard upon us, went to ſearch the ſloop.

I obſerved among them a Dutchman, who ſeemed to be of ſome authority, though he was not commander of either ſhip. He knew us by our countenances to be Engliſhmen, and jabbering to us in his own language, ſwore we ſhould be tied back to back, and thrown into the ſea. I ſpoke Dutch tolerably well; I told him who we were, and begged him, in conſideration of our being Chriſtians and Proteſtants, of neighbouring countries in ſtrict alliance, that he would move the captains to take ſome pity on us. This inflamed his rage; he repeated his threatenings; and turning to his companions, ſpoke with great vehemence in the Japaneſe language, as I ſuppoſe, often uſing the word *Chriſtianos*.

The largeſt of the two pirate ſhips was commanded by a Japaneſe captain, who ſpoke a little Dutch, but very imperfectly. He came up to me, and after ſeveral queſtions, which I anſwered in great humility, he ſaid we ſhould not die. I made the captain a very low bow; and then turning to the Dutchman ſaid, I was ſorry to find more mercy in an heathen, than in a brother Chriſtian.

Chriſtian. But I had ſoon reaſon to repent thoſe fooliſh words: For this malicious reprobate, having often endeavoured in vain to perſuade both the captains that I might be thrown into the ſea (which they would not yield to after the promiſe made me that I ſhould not die) however prevailed ſo far as to have a puniſhment inflicted on me, worſe, in all human appearance, than death itſelf. My men were ſent by an equal diviſion into both the pirate ſhips, and my ſloop new-manned. As to myſelf, it was determined that I ſhould be ſet adrift in a ſmall canoe, with paddles and a ſail, and four days proviſions; which laſt the Japaneſe captain was ſo kind to double out of his own ſtores, and would permit no man to ſearch me. I got down into the canoe, while the Dutchman, ſtanding upon the deck, loaded me with all the curſes and injurious terms his language could afford.

About an hour before we ſaw the pirates, I had taken an obſervation, and found we were in the latitude of 46 N. and of longitude 183. When I was at ſome diſtance from the pirates, I diſcovered by my pocket-glaſs, ſeveral iſlands to the ſouth-eaſt. I ſet up my ſail, the wind being fair, with a deſign to reach the neareſt of thoſe iſlands, which I made a ſhift to do in about three hours. It was all rocky, however I got many birds eggs; and ſtriking fire, I kindled ſome heath and dry ſea-weed, by which I roaſted my eggs. I eat no other ſupper, being reſolved to ſpare my proviſions as much as I could. I paſſed the night under the

the ſhelter of a rock, ſtrewing ſome heath under me, and ſlept pretty well.

The next day I ſailed to another iſland, and thence to a third and fourth, ſometimes uſing my ſail, and ſometimes my paddles. But, not to trouble the reader with a particular account of my diſtreſs, let it ſuffice, that on the fifth day I arrived at the laſt iſland in my ſight, which lay ſouth-ſouth-eaſt to the former.

This iſland was at a greater diſtance than I expected, and I did not reach it in leſs than five hours. I encompaſſed it almoſt round, before I could find a convenient place to land in, which was a ſmall creek about three times the wideneſs of my canoe. I found the iſland to be all rocky, only a little intermingled with tufts of graſs, and ſweet-ſmelling herbs. I took out my ſmall proviſions, and after having refreſhed myſelf, I ſecured the remainder in a cave, whereof there were great numbers. I gathered plenty of eggs upon the rocks, and got a quantity of dry ſea-weed, and parched graſs, which I deſigned to kindle the next day, and roaſt my eggs as well as I could (for I had about me my flint, ſteel, match, and burning-glaſs.) I lay all night in the cave where I had lodged my proviſions. My bed was the ſame dry graſs and ſea-weed which I intended for feuel. I ſlept very little; for the diſquiets of my mind prevailed over my wearineſs, and kept me awake. I conſidered how impoſſible it was to preſerve my life in ſo deſolate a place, and how miſerable my end muſt be; yet found

found myſelf ſo liſtleſs and deſponding, that I had not the heart to riſe; and before I could get ſpirits enough to creep out of my cave, the day was far advanced. I walked a while among the rocks, the ſky was perfectly clear, and the ſun ſo hot, that I was forced to turn my face from it: When all on a ſudden it became obſcure, as I thought, in a manner very different from what happens by the interpoſition of a cloud. I turned back, and perceived a vaſt opaque body between me and the ſun, moving forwards towards the iſland: It ſeemed to be about two miles high, and hid the ſun ſix or ſeven minutes, but I did not obſerve the air to be much colder, or the ſky more darkened, than if I had ſtood under the ſhade of a mountain. As it approached nearer over the place where I was, it appeared to be a firm ſubſtance, the bottom flat, ſmooth, and ſhining very bright from the reflection of the ſea below. I ſtood upon a height about two hundred yards from the ſhore, and ſaw this vaſt body deſcending almoſt to a parallel with me, at leſs than an Engliſh mile diſtance. I took out my pocket-perſpective, and could plainly diſcover numbers of people moving up and down the ſides of it, which appeared to be ſloping; but what thoſe people were doing, I was not able to diſtinguiſh.

The natural love of life gave me ſome inward motions of joy, and I was ready to entertain a hope, that this adventure might ſome way or other help to deliver me from the deſolate place

and condition I was in. But at the ſame time the reader can hardly conceive my aſtoniſhment to behold an iſland in the air, inhabited by men, who were able (as it ſhould ſeem) to raiſe or ſink, or put it into a progreſſive motion, as they pleaſed. But not being at that time in a diſpoſition to philoſophiſe upon this phænomenon, I rather choſe to obſerve what courſe the iſland would take, becauſe it ſeemed for a while to ſtand ſtill. Yet ſoon after it advanced nearer, and I could ſee the ſides of it encompaſſed with ſeveral gradations of galleries, and ſtairs, at certain intervals, to deſcend from one to the other. In the loweſt gallery I beheld ſome people fiſhing with long angling rods, and others looking on. I waved my cap (for my hat was long ſince worn out) and my handkerchief towards the iſland; and upon its nearer approach I called and ſhouted with the utmoſt ſtrength of my voice; and then, looking circumſpectly, I beheld a crowd gathered to that ſide which was moſt in my view. I found by their pointing towards me and to each other, that they plainly diſcovered me, although they made no return to my ſhouting. But I could ſee four or five men running in great haſte up the ſtairs to the top of the iſland, who then diſappeared. I happened rightly to conjecture, that theſe were ſent for orders to ſome perſon in authority upon this occaſion.

The number of people increaſed, and in leſs than half an hour the iſland was moved and raiſed in ſuch a manner, that the loweſt gallery

appeared in a parallel of leſs than an hundred yards diſtance from the height where I ſtood. I then put myſelf into the moſt ſupplicating poſtures, and ſpoke in the humbleſt accent, but received no anſwer. Thoſe who ſtood neareſt over-againſt me, ſeemed to be perſons of diſtinction, as I ſuppoſed, by their habit. They conferred earneſtly with each other, looking often upon me. At length one of them called out in a clear, polite, ſmooth dialect, not unlike in ſound to the Italian; and therefore I returned an anſwer in that language, hoping at leaſt that the cadence might be more agreeable to his ears. Although neither of us underſtood the other, yet my meaning was eaſily known; for the people ſaw the diſtreſs I was in.

They made ſigns for me to come down from the rock, and go towards the ſhore, which I accordingly did; and the flying iſland being raiſed to a convenient height, the verge directly over me, a chain was let down from the loweſt gallery, with a ſeat faſtened to the bottom, to which I fixed myſelf, and was drawn up by pullies.

CHAP. II.

The humours and diſpoſitions of the Laputians *deſcribed. An account of their learning. Of the King, and his court. The author's reception there. The inhabitants ſubject to fear and diſquietudes. An account of the women.*

AT my alighting I was ſurrounded with a crowd of people, but thoſe who ſtood neareſt ſeemed to be of better quality. They beheld me with all the marks and circumſtances of wonder, neither indeed was I much in their debt; having never till then ſeen a race of mortals ſo ſingular in their ſhapes, habits, and countenances. Their heads were all reclined either to the right or the left; one of their eyes turned inward, and the other directly up to the zenith *. Their outward garments were adorned with the the figures of ſuns, moons, and ſtars, interwoven with thoſe of fiddles, flutes, harps, trumpets, guittars, harpſicords, and many other inſtruments of muſic unknown to us in Europe. I obſerved here and there many in the habit of ſervants, with a blown bladder faſtened like a flail

* By this deſcription the author intended to ridicule thoſe who waſte life in ſpeculative ſcience, the powers of whoſe minds are as abſurdly employed as the eyes of the Laputians. *Hawkeſ.*

to the end of a ſhort ſtick, which they carried in their hands. In each bladder was a ſmall quantity of dried peaſe, or little pebbles (as I was afterwards informed.) With theſe bladders they now and then flapped the mouths and ears of thoſe who ſtood near them, of which practice I could not then conceive the meaning. It ſeems the minds of theſe people are ſo taken up with intenſe ſpeculations, that they neither can ſpeak nor attend to the diſcourſes of others, without being rouſed by ſome external action upon the organs of ſpeech and hearing: For which reaſon thoſe perſons, who are able to afford it, always keep a *flapper* (the original is *climenole*) in their family, as one of their domeſtics, nor ever walk abroad or make viſits without him. And the buſineſs of this officer is, when two, three, or more perſons are in company, gently to ſtrike with his bladder the mouth of him who is to ſpeak, and the right ear of him or them to whom the ſpeaker addreſſeth himſelf. This *flapper* is likewiſe employed diligently to attend his maſter in his walks, and upon occaſion to give him a ſoft flap on his eyes, becauſe he is always ſo wrapped up in cogitation, that he is in manifeſt danger of falling down every precipice, and bouncing his head againſt every poſt; and in the ſtreets of juſtling others, or being juſtled himſelf into the kennel.

It was neceſſary to give the reader this information, without which he would be at the ſame loſs with me to underſtand the proceedings of theſe

theſe people, as they conducted me up the ſtairs to the top of the iſland, and from thence to the royal palace. While we were aſcending, they forgot ſeveral times what they were about, and left me to myſelf, till their memories were again rouſed by their *flappers*; for they appeared altogether unmoved by the ſight of my foreign habit and countenance, and by the ſhouts of the vulgar, whoſe thoughts and minds were more diſengaged.

At laſt we entered the palace, and proceeded into the chamber of preſence, where I ſaw the King ſeated on his throne, attended on each ſide by perſons of prime quality. Before the throne was a large table filled with globes and ſpheres, and mathematical inſtruments of all kinds. His Majeſty took not the leaſt notice of us, although our entrance was not without ſufficient noiſe, by the concourſe of all perſons belonging to the court. But he was then deep in a problem, and we attended at leaſt an hour before he could ſolve it. There ſtood by him on each ſide a young page with flaps in their hands, and when they ſaw he was at leiſure, one of them gently ſtruck his mouth, and the other his right ear; at which he ſtarted like one awaked on the ſudden, and looking towards me and the company I was in, recollected the occaſion of our coming, whereof he had been informed before. He ſpoke ſome words, whereupon immediately a young man with a flap came up to my ſide, and flapt me gently on the right ear; but I made ſigns,

as well as I could, that I had no occaſion for ſuch an inſtrument; which, as I afterwards found, gave his Majeſty and the whole court a very mean opinion of my underſtanding. The King, as far as I could conjecture, aſked me ſeveral queſtions, and I addreſſed myſelf to him in all the languages I had. When it was found, that I could neither underſtand, nor be underſtood, I was conducted by his order to an apartment in his palace, (this prince being diſtinguiſhed above all his predeceſſors for his hoſpitality to ſtrangers) where two ſervants were appointed to attend me. My dinner was brought, and four perſons of quality, whom I remembered to have ſeen very near the King's perſon, did me the honour to dine with me. We had two courſes of three diſhes each. In the firſt courſe there was a ſhoulder of mutton cut into an equilateral triangle, a piece of beef into a rhomboides, and a pudding into a cycloid. The ſecond courſe was two ducks truſſed up into the form of fiddles; ſauſages and puddings reſembling flutes and hautboys, and a breaſt of veal in the ſhape of a harp. The ſervants cut our bread into cones, cylinders, parallelograms, and ſeveral other mathematical figures.

While we were at dinner, I made bold to aſk the names of ſeveral things in their language; and thoſe noble perſons, by the aſſiſtance of their *flappers*, delighted to give me anſwers, hoping to raiſe my admiration of their great abilities, if I could be brought to converſe with them. I was

ſoon

ſoon able to call for bread and drink, or whatever elſe I wanted.

After dinner my company withdrew, and a perſon was ſent to me by the King's order, attended by a *flapper*. He brought with him pen, ink, and paper, and three or four books, giving me to underſtand by ſigns, that he was ſent to teach me the language. We ſat together four hours, in which time I wrote down a great number of words in columns, with the tranſlations over-againſt them; I likewiſe made a ſhift to learn ſeveral ſhort ſentences. For my tutor would order one of my ſervants to fetch ſomething, to turn about, to make a bow, to ſit, or to ſtand, or walk, and the like. Then I took down the ſentence in writing. He ſhewed me alſo in one of his books the figures of the ſun, moon, and ſtars, the zodiac, the tropics, and polar circles, together with the denominations of many figures of planes and ſolids. He gave me the names and deſcriptions of all the muſical inſtruments, and the general terms of art in playing on each of them. After he had left me, I placed all my words, with their interpretations, in alphabetical order: And thus in a few days, by the help of a very faithful memory, I got ſome inſight into their language.

The word, which I interpret the *flying* or *floating iſland*, is in the original Laputa, whereof I could never learn the true etymology. *Lap* in the old obſolete language ſignifieth *high*, and *untuh* a *governor*, from which they ſay by corruption

ruption was derived Laputa, from Lapuntuh. But I do not approve of this derivation, which ſeems to be a little ſtrained. I ventured to offer to the learned among them a conjecture of my own, that Laputa was *quaſi lap outed*; *lap* ſignifying properly the dancing of the ſun-beams in the ſea, and *outed* a wing; which however I ſhall not obtrude, but ſubmit to the judicious reader.

Thoſe to whom the King had entruſted me, obſerving how ill I was clad, ordered a taylor to come next morning, and take meaſure for a ſuit of clothes. This operator did his office after a different manner from thoſe of his trade in Europe. He firſt took my altitude by a quadrant, and then with rule and compaſſes deſcribed the dimenſions and outlines of my whole body, all which he entered upon paper; and in ſix days brought my clothes very ill made, and quite out of ſhape, by happening to miſtake a figure in the calculation. But my comfort was, that I obſerved ſuch accidents very frequent, and little regarded.

During my confinement for want of clothes, and by an indiſpoſition that held me ſome days longer, I much enlarged my dictionary; and when I went next to court was able to underſtand many things the King ſpoke, and to return him ſome kind of anſwers. His Majeſty had given orders, that the iſland ſhould move north-eaſt and by eaſt to the vertical point over Lagado, the metropolis of the whole kingdom below, upon the firm earth. It was about nine-

ty

ty leagues diſtant, and our voyage laſted four days and an half. I was not in the leaſt ſenſible of the progreſſive motion made in the air by the iſland. On the ſecond morning, about eleven o'clock, the King himſelf in perſon, attended by his nobility, courtiers, and officers, having prepared all their muſical inſtruments, played on them for three hours without intermiſſion, ſo that I was quite ſtunned with the noiſe: Neither could I poſſibly gueſs the meaning, till my tutor informed me. He ſaid, that the people of their iſland had their ears adapted to hear the muſic of the ſpheres, which always played at certain periods, and the court was now prepared to bear their part, in whatever inſtrument they moſt excelled.

In our journey towards Lagado, the capital city, his Majeſty ordered that the iſland ſhould ſtop over certain towns and villages, from whence he might receive the petitions of his ſubjects. And to this purpoſe ſeveral pack-threads were let down with ſmall weights at the bottom. On theſe pack-threads the people ſtrung their petitions, which mounted up directly, like the ſcraps of paper faſtened by ſchoolboys at the end of the ſtring that holds their kite. Sometimes we received wine and victuals from below, which were drawn up by pullies.

The knowledge I had in mathematics gave me great aſſiſtance in acquiring their phraſeology, which depended much upon that ſcience and muſic; and in the latter I was not unſkilled. Their

ideas

ideas are perpetually converſant in lines and f gures. If they would for example praiſe th beauty of a woman, or any other animal, the deſcribe it by rhombs, circles, parallelogram ellipſes, and other geometrical terms, or b words of art drawn from muſic, needleſs he to repeat. I obſerved in the King's kitchen a ſorts of mathematical and muſical inſtrument after the figures of which they cut up the joint that were ſerved to his Majeſty's table.

Their houſes are very ill built, the walls b vil, without one right-angle in any apartment and this defect ariſeth from the contempt the bear to practical geometry, which they deſpi as vulgar and mechanic, thoſe inſtructions the give being too refined for the intellectuals of the workmen, which occaſions perpetual miſtake And although they are dextrous enough upo a piece of paper in the management of the rul the pencil, and the divider, yet in the commo actions and behaviour of life I have not ſeen more clumſy, aukward and unhandy people, nc ſo ſlow and perplexed in their conceptions upo all other ſubjects, except thoſe of mathemati and muſic. They are very bad reaſoners, an vehemently given to oppoſition, unleſs when the happen to be of the right opinion, which is ſe dom their caſe. Imagination, fancy, and inver tion, they are wholly ſtrangers to, nor have an words in their language, by which thoſe ide can be expreſſed; the whole compaſs of thei

thought

thoughts and minds being ſhut up within the two aforementioned ſciences.

Moſt of them, and eſpecially thoſe who deal in the aſtronomical part, have great faith in judicial aſtrology, although they are aſhamed to own it publicly. But what I chiefly admired, and thought altogether unaccountable, was the ſtrong diſpoſition I obſerved in them towards news and politics, perpetually enquiring into public affairs, giving their judgments in matters of ſtate, and paſſionately diſputing every inch of a party opinion. I have indeed obſerved the ſame diſpoſition among moſt of the mathematicians I have known in Europe; although I could never diſcover the leaſt analogy between the two ſciences; unleſs thoſe people ſuppoſe, that becauſe the ſmalleſt circle hath as many degrees as the largeſt, therefore the regulation and management of the world require no more abilities, than the handling and turning of a globe: But I rather take this quality to ſpring from a very common infirmity of human nature, inclining us to be moſt curious and conceited in matters where we have leaſt concern, and for which we are leaſt adapted either by ſtudy or nature.

Theſe people are under continual diſquietudes, never enjoying a minute's peace of mind; and their diſturbances proceed from cauſes, which very little affect the reſt of mortals. Their apprehenſions ariſe from ſeveral changes they dread in the celeſtial bodies. For inſtance, that the earth, by the continual approaches of the ſun towards

wards it, muſt in courſe of time be abſorb
ſwallowed up. That the face of the ſun
degrees be encruſted with its own effluvi
give no more light to the world. That th
very narrowly eſcaped a bruſh from the
the laſt comet, which would have infalli
duced it to aſhes; and that the next, whic
have calculated for one and thirty years
will probably deſtroy us. For, if in its
lion it ſhould approach within a certain
of the ſun (as by their calculations the
reaſon to dread) it will receive a degree c
ten thouſand times more intenſe, than t
red-hot glowing iron; and in its abſence
the ſun, carry a blazing tail ten hundred
ſand and fourteen miles long; through
if the earth ſhould paſs at the diſtance
hundred thouſand miles from the *nucl*
main body of the comet, it muſt in its
be ſet on fire, and reduced to aſhes. Tl
ſun, daily ſpending its rays without any
ment to ſupply them, will at laſt be wholl
ſumed and annihilated; which muſt be at
with the deſtruction of this earth, and of
planets that receive their light from it *.

They are ſo perpetually alarmed with t
prehenſions of theſe, and the like imp
dangers, that they can neither ſleep qui
their beds, nor have any reliſh for the
mon pleaſures or amuſements of life.

I

* All theſe were ſuppoſitions of perſons eminent
time for mathematical knowledge. Hawkeſ.

they meet an acquaintance in the morning, the firſt queſtion is about the ſun's health, how he looked at his ſetting and riſing, and what hopes they have to avoid the ſtroke of the approaching comet. This converſation they are apt to run into with the ſame temper, that boys diſcover in delighting to hear terrible ſtories of ſpirits and hobgoblins; which they greedily liſten to, and dare not go to bed for fear.

The women of the iſland have abundance of vivacity; they contemn their huſbands, and are exceedingly fond of ſtrangers, whereof there is always a conſiderable number from the continent below attending at court, either upon affairs of the ſeveral towns and corporations, or their own particular occaſions, but are much deſpiſed, becauſe they want the ſame endowments. Among theſe the ladies chuſe their gallants: But the vexation is, that they act with too much eaſe and ſecurity, for the huſband is always ſo wrapt in ſpeculation, that the miſtreſs and lover may proceed to the greateſt familiarities before his face, if he be but provided with paper and implements, and without his *flapper* at his ſide.

The wives and daughters lament their confinement to the iſland, although I think it the moſt delicious ſpot of ground in the world: And although they live here in the greateſt plenty and magnificence, and are allowed to do whatever they pleaſe, they long to ſee the world, and take the diverſions of the metropolis, which they are

not allowed to do without a particular licence from the King; and this is not eaſy to be obtained, becauſe the people of quality have found by frequent experience, how hard it is to perſuade their women to return from below. I was told, that a great court lady, who had ſeveral children, is married to the prime miniſter, the richeſt ſubject in the kingdom, a very graceful perſon, extremely fond of her, and lives in the fineſt palace of the iſland, went down to Lagado on the pretence of health, there hid herſelf for ſeveral months, till the King ſent a warrant to ſearch for her, and ſhe was found in an obſcure eating-houſe all in rags, having pawned her clothes to maintain an old deformed footman, who beat her every day, and in whoſe company ſhe was taken much againſt her will. And although her huſband received her with all poſſible kindneſs, and without the leaſt reproach, ſhe ſoon after contrived to ſteal down again with all her jewels to the ſame gallant, and hath not been heard of ſince.

This may perhaps paſs with the reader rather for an European or Engliſh ſtory, than for one of a country ſo remote. But he may pleaſe to conſider, that the caprices of women-kind are not limited by any climate or nation, and that they are much more uniform than can be eaſily imagined.

In about a month's time, I had made a tolerable proficiency in their language, and was able to anſwer moſt of the King's queſtions, when I had

had the honour to attend him. His Majeſty diſcovered not the leaſt curioſity to enquire into the laws, government, hiſtory, religion, or manners of the countries where I had been, but confined his queſtions to the ſtate of mathematics, and received the account I gave him with great contempt and indifference, though often rouſed by his *flapper* on each ſide.

CHAP. III.

A phænomenon ſolved by modern philoſophy and aſtronomy. The Laputians *great improvements in the latter. The King's method of ſuppreſſing inſurrections.*

I Deſired leave of this prince to ſee the curioſities of the iſland, which he was graciouſly pleaſed to grant, and ordered my tutor to attend me. I chiefly wanted to know, to what cauſe in art or in nature it owed its ſeveral motions, whereof I will now give a philoſophical account to the reader.

The flying or floating iſland is exactly circular, its diameter 7837 yards, or about four miles and an half, and conſequently contains ten thouſand acres. It is three hundred yards thick. The bottom, or under ſurface, which appears to thoſe who view it from below, is one even regular plate of adamant, ſhooting up to the height of about two hundred yards. Above it lie the ſeve-

ral minerals in their uſual order, and over all is a coat of rich mould, ten or twelve feet deep. The declivity of the upper ſurface, from the circumference to the centre, is the natural cauſe why all the dews and rains, which fall upon the iſland, are conveyed in ſmall rivulets towards the middle, where they are emptied into four large baſons, each of about half a mile in circuit and two hundred yards diſtant from the centre. From theſe baſons the water is continually exhaled by the ſun in the day-time, which effectually prevents their overflowing. Beſides, as it is in the power of the monarch to raiſe the iſland above the region of clouds and vapours, he can prevent the falling of dews and rains whenever he pleaſes. For the higheſt clouds cannot riſe above two miles, as naturaliſts agree, at leaſt they were never known to do ſo in that country.

At the centre of the iſland there is a chaſm about fifty yards in diameter, from whence the aſtronomers deſcend into a large dome, which is therefore called *flandona gagnole*, or the *aſtronomer's cave*, ſituated at the depth of a hundred yards beneath the upper ſurface of the adamant. In this cave are twenty lamps continually burning, which, from the reflection of the adamant, caſt a ſtrong light into every part. The place is ſtored with great variety of ſextants, quadrants, teleſcopes, aſtrolabes, and other aſtronomical inſtruments. But the greateſt curioſity, upon which the fate of the iſland depends, is a loadſtone of a prodigious ſize, in ſhape reſembling a weaver's

weaver's ſhuttle. It is in length ſix yards, and in the thickeſt part at leaſt three yards over. This magnet is ſuſtained by a very ſtrong axle of adamant paſſing through its middle, upon which it plays, and is poiſed ſo exactly, that the weakeſt hand can turn it. It is hooped round with an hollow cylinder of adamant, four feet deep, as many thick, and twelve yards in diameter, placed horizontally, and ſupported by eight adamantine feet, each ſix yards high. In the middle of the concave ſide there is a groove twelve inches deep, in which the extremities of the axle are lodged, and turned round as there is occaſion.

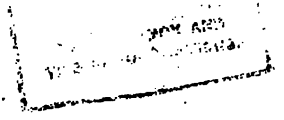
The ſtone cannot be moved from its place by any force, becauſe the hoop and its feet are one continued piece with that body of adamant, which conſtitutes the bottom of the iſland.

By means of this loadſtone the iſland is made to riſe and fall, and move from one place to another. For, with reſpect to that part of the earth over which the monarch preſides, the ſtone is endued at one of its ſides with an attractive power, and at the other with a repulſive. Upon placing the magnet erect, with its attracting end towards the earth, the iſland deſcends; but when the repelling extremity points downwards, the iſland mounts directly upwards. When the poſition of the ſtone is oblique, the motion of the iſland is ſo too: For in this magnet the forces always act in lines parallel to its direction.

By this oblique motion the iſland is conveyed to different parts of the monarch's dominions. To explain the manner of its progreſs, let *A B* repreſent a line drawn acroſs the dominions of Balnibarbi, let the line *c d* repreſent the load-ſtone, of which let *d* be the repelling end, and *c* the attracting end, the iſland being over *C*; let the ſtone be placed in the poſition *c d*, with its repelling end downwards; then the iſland will be driven upwards obliquely towards *D*. When it is arrived at *D*, let the ſtone be turned upon its axle till its attracting end points towards *E*, and then the iſland will be carried obliquely towards *E*; where if the ſtone be again turned upon its axle till it ſtands in the poſition *E F*, with its repelling point downward, the iſland will riſe obliquely towards *F*, where, by directing the attracting end towards *G*, the iſland may be carried to *G*, and from *G* to *H*, by turning the ſtone, ſo as to make its repelling extremity point directly downward. And thus, by changing the ſituation of the ſtone as often as there is occaſion, the iſland is made to riſe and fall by turns in an oblique direction, and by thoſe alternate riſings and fallings (the obliquity being not conſiderable) is conveyed from one part of the dominions to the other.

But it muſt be obſerved, that this iſland cannot move beyond the extent of the dominions below, nor can it riſe above the height of four miles. For which the aſtronomers (who have written large ſyſtems concerning the ſtone) aſſign

the



Lapula
D
F
H
E
G
BALNIBARBI
Lagado
Glaldon

the following reaſon: That the magnetic virtue does not extend beyond the diſtance of four miles, and that the mineral, which acts upon the ſtone in the bowels of the earth, and in the ſea about ſix leagues diſtant from the ſhore, is not diffuſed through the whole globe, but terminated with the limits of the King's dominions; and it was eaſy, from the great advantage of ſuch a ſuperior ſituation, for a prince to bring under his obedience whatever country lay within the attraction of that magnet.

When the ſtone is put parallel to the plane of the horizon, the iſland ſtandeth ſtill; for in that caſe the extremities of it, being at equal diſtance from the earth, act with equal force, the one in drawing downwards, the other in puſhing upwards, and conſequently no motion can enſue.

This loadſtone is under the care of certain aſtronomers, who from time to time give it ſuch poſitions as the monarch directs. They ſpend the greateſt part of their lives in obſerving the celeſtial bodies, which they do by the aſſiſtance of glaſſes, far excelling ours in goodneſs. For, although their largeſt teleſcopes do not exceed three feet, they magnify much more than thoſe of an hundred with us, and ſhew the ſtars with greater clearneſs. This advantage hath enabled them to extend their diſcoveries much farther than our aſtronomers in Europe; for they have made a catalogue of ten thouſand fixed ſtars, whereas the largeſt of ours do not contain above one third part of that number. They have

have likewiſe diſcovered two leſſer ſtars, c
lites, which revolve about Mars, whereof
nermoſt is diſtant from the centre of the
planet exactly three of his diameters, a
outermoſt, five; the former revolves in t
of ten hours, and the latter in twenty-o
an half; ſo that the ſquares of their pe
times are very near in the ſame proporti
the cubes of their diſtance from the ce
Mars; which evidently ſhews them to be
ed by the ſame law of gravitation that inf
the other heavenly bodies.

They have obſerved ninety-three diffe
mets, and ſettled their periods with great
neſs. If this be true (and they affirm
great confidence) it is much to be wiſhe
their obſervations were made public, wher
theory of comets, which at preſent is ve
and defective, might be brought to the ſa
fection with the other parts of aſtronomy.

The King would be the moſt abſolute
in the univerſe, if he could but prevail o
niſtry to join with him: But theſe, havi
eſtates below on the continent, and con
that the office of a favourite hath a very
tain tenure, would never conſent to the
ing their country.

If any town ſhould engage in rebellion
tiny, fall into violent factions, or refuſe
the uſual tribute, the King hath two n
of reducing them to obedience. The fi
the mildeſt courſe is by keeping the iſla

ering over ſuch a town, and the lands about it, whereby he can deprive them of the benefit of the ſun and the rain, and conſequently afflict the inhabitants with dearth and diſeaſes. And if the crime deſerve it, they are at the ſame time pelted from above with great ſtones, againſt which they have no defence but by creeping into cellars or caves, while the roofs of their houſes are beaten to pieces. But if they ſtill continue obſtinate, or offer to raiſe inſurrections, he proceeds to the laſt remedy, by letting the iſland drop directly upon their heads, which makes an univerſal deſtruction both of houſes and men. However, this is an extremity to which the prince is ſeldom driven; neither indeed is he willing to put it in execution, nor dare his miniſters adviſe him to an action, which as it would render them odious to the people, ſo it would be a great damage to their own eſtates, which lie all below; for the iſland is the King's demeſne.

But there is ſtill indeed a more weighty reaſon, why the kings of this country have been always averſe from executing ſo terrible an action, unleſs upon the utmoſt neceſſity. For if the town intended to be deſtroyed ſhould have in it any tall rocks, as it generally falls out in the larger cities, a ſituation probably choſen at firſt with a view to prevent ſuch a cataſtrophe; or if it abound in high ſpires, or pillars of ſtone, a ſudden fall might endanger the bottom or under ſurface of the iſland, which, although it conſiſt, as I have ſaid, of one entire adamant, two hundred

dred yards thick, might happen to crack by too great a ſhock, or burſt by approaching too near the fires from the houſes below, as the backs both of iron and ſtone will often do in our chimnies. Of all this the people are well appriſed, and underſtand how far to carry their obſtinacy, where their liberty or property is concerned. And the King, when he is higheſt provoked, and moſt determined to preſs a city to rubbiſh, orders the iſland to deſcend with great gentleneſs, out of a pretence of tenderneſs to his people; but indeed for fear of breaking the adamantine bottom; in which caſe, it is the opinion of all their philoſophers, that the loadſtone could no longer hold it up, and the whole maſs would fall to the ground.

By a fundamental law of this realm, neither the King, nor either of his two elder ſons, are permitted to leave the iſland, nor the Queen, till ſhe is paſt child-bearing.

CHAP. IV.

The author leaves Laputa, *is conveyed to* Balnibarbi, *arrives at the metropolis. A deſcription of the metropolis, and the country adjoining. The author hoſpitably received by a great lord. His converſation with that lord.*

ALTHOUGH I cannot ſay that I was ill-treated in this iſland, yet I muſt confeſs I thought myſelf too much neglected, not without ſome

ſome degree of contempt. For neither prince nor people appeared to be curious in any part of knowledge, except mathematics and muſic, wherein I was far their inferior, and upon that account very little regarded.

On the other ſide, after having ſeen all the curioſities of the iſland, I was very deſirous to leave it, being heartily weary of thoſe people. They were indeed excellent in two ſciences, for which I have great eſteem, and wherein I am not unverſed, but at the ſame time ſo abſtracted and involved in ſpeculation, that I never met with ſuch diſagreeable companions. I converſed only with women, tradeſmen, *flappers*, and court-pages, during two months of my abode there; by which at laſt I rendered myſelf extremely contemptible; yet theſe were the only people, from whom I could ever receive a reaſonable anſwer.

I had obtained by hard ſtudy a good degree of knowledge in their language; I was weary of being confined to an iſland, where I received ſo little countenance, and reſolved to leave it with the firſt opportunity.

There was a great lord at court, nearly related to the King, and for that reaſon alone uſed with reſpect. He was univerſally reckoned the moſt ignorant and ſtupid perſon among them. He had performed many eminent ſervices for the crown, had great natural and acquired parts, adorned with integrity and honour, but ſo ill an ear for muſic, that his detractors reported he had been often known to beat time in the wrong place; neither

be pleaſed to explain to me, what could be meant by ſo many buſy heads, hands, and faces, both in the ſtreets and the fields, becauſe I did not diſcover any good effects they produced; but on the contrary, I never knew a ſoil ſo unhappily cultivated, houſes ſo ill contrived and ſo ruinous, or a people whoſe countenances and habit expreſſed ſo much miſery and want.

This Lord Munodi was a perſon of the firſt rank, and had been ſome years governor of Lagado; but by a cabal of miniſters was diſcharged for inſufficiency.

However, the King treated him with tenderneſs, as a well-meaning man, but of a low contemptible underſtanding.

When I gave that free cenſure of the country and its inhabitants, he made no further anſwer, than by telling me, that I had not been long enough among them to form a judgment; and that the different nations of the world had different cuſtoms; with other common topics to the ſame purpoſe. But, when we returned to his palace, he aſked me how I liked the building, what abſurdities I obſerved, and what quarrel I had with the dreſs or looks of his domeſtics? This he might ſafely do; becauſe every thing about him was magnificent, regular, and polite. I anſwered, that his Excellency's prudence, quality and fortune, had exempted him from thoſe defects, which folly and beggary had produced in others. He ſaid, if I would go with him to his country-houſe, about twenty miles diſtant, where

where his eſtate lay, there would be more leiſure for this kind of converſation. I told his Excellency, that I was entirely at his diſpoſal; and accordingly we ſet out next morning.

During our journey, he made me obſerve the ſeveral methods uſed by farmers in managing their lands; which to me were wholly unaccountable; for, except in ſome very few places, I could not diſcover one ear of corn, or blade of graſs. But in three hours travelling, the ſcene was wholly altered; we came into a moſt beautiful country; farmers houſes at ſmall diſtances, neatly built; the fields incloſed, containing vineyards, corn-grounds, and meadows. Neither do I remember to have ſeen a more delightful proſpect. His Excellency obſerved my countenance to clear up; he told me with a ſigh, that there his eſtate began, and would continue the ſame, till we ſhould come to his houſe: That his countrymen ridiculed and deſpiſed him for managing his affairs no better, and for ſetting ſo ill an example to the kingdom; which however was followed by very few, ſuch as were old, and wilful, and weak like himſelf.

We came at length to the houſe, which was indeed a noble ſtructure, built according to the beſt rules of ancient architecture. The fountains, gardens, walks, avenues, and groves, were all diſpoſed with exact judgment and taſte. I gave due praiſes to every thing I ſaw, whereof his Excellency took not the leaſt notice till after ſupper; when, there being no third companion,

he told me with a very melancholy air, that he doubted he muſt throw down his houſes in town and country to rebuild them after the preſent mode, deſtroy all his plantations, and caſt others into ſuch a form as modern uſage required, and give the ſame directions to all his tenants, unleſs he would ſubmit to incur the cenſure of pride, ſingularity, affectation, ignorance, caprice, and perhaps increaſe his Majeſty's diſpleaſure.

That the admiration I appeared to be under, would ceaſe or diminiſh, when he had informed me of ſome particulars, which probably I never heard of at court, the people there being too much taken up in their own ſpeculations to have regard to what paſſed here below.

The ſum of his diſcourſe was to this effect: That about forty years ago, certain perſons went up to Laputa, either upon buſineſs or diverſion, and, after five months continuance, came back with a very little ſmattering in mathematics, but full of volatile ſpirits acquired in that airy region. That theſe perſons, upon their return, began to diſlike the management of every thing below, and fell into ſchemes of putting all arts, ſciences, languages, and mechanics upon a new foot. To this end, they procured a royal patent for erecting an academy of projectors in Lagado; and the humour prevailed ſo ſtrongly among the people, that there is not a town of any conſequence in the kingdom, without ſuch an academy. In theſe colleges the profeſſors contrive new rules and methods of agriculture and building, and new inſtruments

ſtruments and tools for all trades and manufactures; whereby, as they undertake one man ſhall do the work of ten, a palace may be built in a week, of materials ſo durable as to laſt for ever without repairing. All the fruits of the earth ſhall come to maturity at whatever ſeaſon we think fit to chuſe, and increaſe an hundred fold more than they do at preſent; with innumerable other happy propoſals. The only inconvenience is, that none of theſe projects are yet brought to perfection; and in the mean time the whole country lies miſerably waſte, the houſes in ruins, and the people without food or cloaths. By all which, inſtead of being diſcouraged, they are fifty times more violently bent upon proſecuting their ſchemes, driven equally on by hope and deſpair: That as for himſelf, being not of an enterpriſing ſpirit, he was content to go on in the old forms, to live in the houſes his anceſtors had built, and act as they did in every part of life without innovation: That ſome few other perſons of quality and gentry had done the ſame, but were looked on with an eye of contempt and ill-will, as enemies to the art, ignorant, and ill commonwealth's men, preferring their own eaſe and ſloth before the general improvement of their country.

His Lordſhip added, that he would not, by any further particulars prevent the pleaſure I ſhould certainly take in viewing the grand academy, whither he was reſolved I ſhould go. He only deſired me to obſerve a ruined building upon the ſide

of a mountain about three miles diſtant, of which he gave me this account: That he had a very convenient mill within half a mile of his houſe, turned by a current from a large river, and ſufficient for his own family, as well as a great number of his tenants: That about ſeven years ago, a club of thoſe projectors came to him with propoſals to deſtroy this mill, and build another on the ſide of that mountain, on the long ridge whereof a long canal muſt be cut for a repoſitory of water, to be conveyed up by pipes and engines to ſupply the mill: Becauſe the wind and air upon a height agitated the water, and thereby made it fitter for motion; and becauſe the water deſcending down a declivity, would turn the mill with half the current of a river, whoſe courſe is more upon a level. He ſaid, that being then not very well with the court, and preſſed by many of his friends, he complied with the propoſal; and after employing an hundred men for two years, the work miſcarried, the projectors went off, laying the blame entirely upon him, railing at him ever ſince, and putting others upon the ſame experiment, with equal aſſurance of ſucceſs, as well as equal diſappointment.

In a few days we came back to town; and his Excellency conſidering the bad character he had in the academy, would not go with me himſelf, but recommended me to a friend of his to bear me company thither. My Lord was pleaſed to repreſent me as a great admirer of projects, and a

perſon

perſon of much curioſity, and eaſy belief; which indeed was not without truth, for I had myſelf been a ſort of projector in my younger days.

CHAP. V*.

The author permitted to ſee the grand academy of Lagado. *The academy largely deſcribed. The arts wherein the profeſſors employ themſelves.*

THIS academy is not an entire ſingle building, but a continuation of ſeveral houſes on both ſides of a ſtreet, which growing waſte, was purchaſed, and applied to that uſe.

I

* However wild the deſcription of the flying iſland, and the manners and various projects of the philoſophers of Lagado may appear, yet it is a *real* picture, embelliſhed with much *latent* wit and humour. It is a ſatire upon thoſe aſtronomers and mathematicians who have ſo entirely dedicated their time to the planets, that they have been careleſs of their family and country, and have been chiefly anxious about the œconomy and welfare of the upper worlds. But if we conſider Swift's romance in a ſerious light, we ſhall find him of opinion, that thoſe determinations in philoſophy, which at preſent ſeem to the moſt knowing men to be perfectly well founded and underſtood, are in reality unſettled, or uncertain, and may perhaps, ſome ages hence, be as much decried as the axioms of Ariſtotle are at this day. Sir Iſaac Newton and his notions may hereafter be out of faſhion. There is a kind of mode in philoſophy, as well as in other things: And ſuch modes often change more from the humour and caprice of men, than either from the unreaſonable or the ill-founded concluſions of the philoſophy itſelf. The reaſonings of ſome philoſophers have undoubtedly better founda-

tion

I was recived very kindly by the warde
went for many days to the academy.
room hath in it one or more projectors
believe I could not be in fewer than five h
rooms.

The firſt man I ſaw was of a meagre
with ſooty hands and face, his hair and
long, ragged, and ſinged in ſeveral place
cloaths, ſhirt, and ſkin, were all of the ſa
lour. He had been eight years upon a
for extracting ſun-beams out of cucumbers,
were to be put into vials hermetically ſeale
let out to warm the air in raw inclemen
mers. He told me, he did not doubt,
eight years more he ſhould be able to ſup
governor's gardens with ſunſhine at a rea
rate; but he complained, that his ſtock w
and entreated me to give him ſomething as
courag

tion than thoſe of others: But I am of opinion, (a
ſeems to be in the ſame way of thinking), that the
plauded philoſophy hitherto extant, has not fully, clea
certainly explained many difficulties in the phænomen
ture. I am induced to believe, that God may have a
denied us the perfect knowledge of many points in phil
ſo that we ſhall never arrive at that perfection, howeve
we may ſuppoſe ourſelves of having attained to it alread
on the whole we may ſay with Tully, *Omnibus fere in*
maxime in phyſicis, quid non ſit citius quam quid ſit,
Orrery.

This note in general ſeems to be a teſtimony of his L
approbation, but it is not eaſy to diſcover what in parti
meant by the word *real*, ſince every picture is a real
whether it be copied from nature or fancy; and indeed
qually difficult to conceive how a *picture* of any kind can
bellished with that which is *hidden*. Hawkeſ.

couragement to ingenuity, eſpecially ſince this had been a very dear ſeaſon for cucumbers. I made him a ſmall preſent; for my Lord had furniſhed me with money on purpoſe, becauſe he knew their practice of begging from all who go to ſee them.

I went into another chamber, but was ready to retten back, being almoſt overcome with a horrible ſtink. My conductor preſſed me forward, whijuring me in a whiſper to give no offence, which would be highly reſented, and therefore I durſt not ſo much as ſtop my noſe. The proctor of this cell was the moſt ancient ſtudent of the academy; his face and beard were of a pale yellow; his hands and cloaths dawbed over with filth. When I was preſented to him, he gave me a cloſe embrace (a compliment I could well have excuſed). His employment from his firſt coming into the academy, was an operation to reduce human excrement to its original food, by ſeparating the ſeveral parts, removing the tincture which it receives from the gall, making the odour exhale, and ſcumming off the ſaliva. He had a weekly allowance from the ſociety, of a veſſel filled with human ordure, about the bigneſs of a Briſtol barrel.

I ſaw another at work, to calcine ice into gunpowder, who likewiſe ſhewed me a treatiſe he had written concerning the malleability of fire, which he intended to publiſh.

There was a moſt ingenious architect, who had contrived a new method for building houſes, by beginning

beginning at the roof, and working down to the foundation, which he juſtified to n the like practice of thoſe two prudent inſec bee and the ſpider.

There was a man born blind, who had ſ apprentices in his own condition: Their em ment was to mix colours for painters, which maſter taught them to diſtinguiſh by feelin ſmelling. It was indeed my misfortune to them at that time not very perfect in their le and the profeſſor himſelf happened to be rally miſtaken. This artiſt is much encou and eſteemed by the whole fraternity.

In another apartment I was highly pleaſed a projector, who had found a device of pl the ground with hogs, to ſave the charg ploughs, cattle, and labour. The meth this: In an acre of ground you bury, at fix i diſtance and eight deep, a quantity of ac dates, cheſnuts, and other maſt or veget whereof theſe animals are fondeſt: Then drive ſix hundred or more of them into the where in a few days they will root up the gr in ſearch of their food, and make it fit for ing, at the ſame time manuring it with dung; it is true, upon experiment they f the charge and trouble very great, and the little or no crop. However, it is not do that this invention may be capable of grea provement.

I went into another room, where the and ceiling were all hung round with cob

except a narrow paſſage for the artiſt to go in and out. At my entrance he called aloud to me not to diſturb his webs. He lamented the fatal miſtake the world had been ſo long in of uſing ſilk-worms, while we had ſuch plenty of domeſtic inſects, who infinitely excelled the former, becauſe they underſtood how to weave as well as ſpin. And he propoſed farther, that by employing ſpiders, the charge of dying ſilks ſhould be wholly ſaved; whereof I was fully convinced, when he ſhewed me a vaſt number of flies moſt beautifully coloured, wherewith he fed his ſpiders, aſſuring us that the webs would take a tincture from them; and as he had them of all hues, he hoped to fit every body's fancy, as ſoon as he could find proper food for the flies, of certain gums, oils, and other glutinous matter, to give a ſtrength and conſiſtence to the threads.

There was an aſtronomer, who had undertaken to place a ſun-dial upon the great weather-cock on the town-houſe, by adjuſting the annual and diurnal motions of the earth and ſun, ſo as to anſwer and coincide with all accidental turnings of the wind.

I was complaining of a ſmall fit of the cholic, upon which my conductor led me into a room where a great phyſician reſided, who was famous for curing that diſeaſe by contrary operations from the ſame inſtrument. He had a large pair of bellows, with a long ſlender muzzle of ivory: This he conveyed eight inches up the *anus*, and drawing in the wind, he affirmed he could make the

the guts as lank as a dried bladder. But when the diſeaſe was more ſtubborn and violent, he let in the muzzle while the bellows were full of wind, which he diſcharged into the body of the patient; then withdrew the inſtrument to repleniſh it, clapping his thumb ſtrongly againſt the orifice of the fundament; and this being repeated three or four times, the adventitious wind would ruſh out, bringing the noxious along with it (like water put into a pump) and the patient recover. I ſaw him try both experiments upon a dog, but could not diſcern any effect from the former. After the latter, the animal was ready to burſt, and made ſo violent a diſcharge, as was very offenſive to me and my companions. The dog died on the ſpot, and we left the doctor endeavouring to recover him by the ſame operation.

I viſited many other apartments, but ſhall not trouble my reader with all the curioſities I obſerved, being ſtudious of brevity.

I had hitherto ſeen only one ſide of the academy, the other being appropriated to the advancers of ſpeculative learning, of whom I ſhall ſay ſomething when I have mentioned one illuſtrious perſon more, who is called among them *the univerſal artiſt*. He told us, he had been thirty years employing his thoughts for the improvement of human life. He had two large rooms full of wonderful curioſities, and fifty men at work. Some were condenſing air into a dry tangible ſubſtance, by extracting the nitre, and letting the aqueous or fluid particles percolate;

others ſoftening marble for pillows and pinuſhions; others petrifying the hoofs of a living horſe, to preſerve them from foundering. The artiſt himſelf was at that time buſy upon two great deſigns; the firſt to ſow land with chaff, wherein he affirmed the true ſeminal virtue to be contained, as he demonſtrated by ſeveral experiments, which I was not ſkilful enough to comprehend. The other was, by a certain compoſition of gums, minerals, and vegetables, outwardly applied to prevent the growth of wool upon two young lambs; and he hoped, in a reaſonable time, to propagate the breed of naked ſheep all over the kingdom.

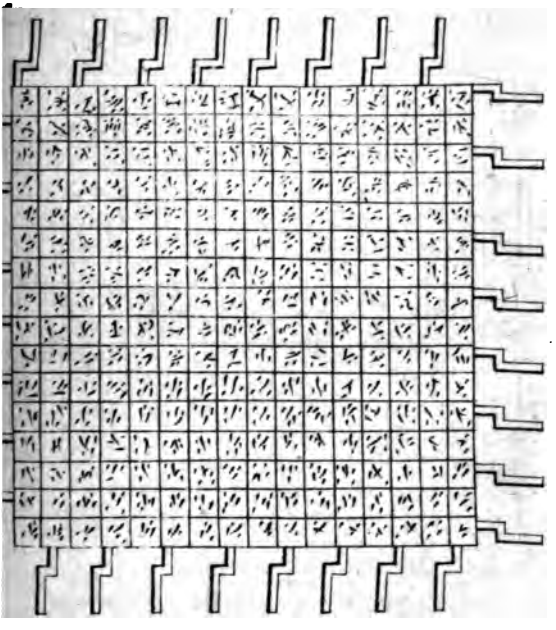
We croſſed a walk to the other part of the academy, where, as I have already ſaid, the projectors in ſpeculative learning reſided.

The firſt profeſſor I ſaw, was in a very large room, with forty pupils about him. After ſalutation, obſerving me to look earneſtly upon a frame, which took up the greateſt part of both the length and breadth of the room, he ſaid, perhaps I might wonder to ſee him employed in a project for improving ſpeculative knowledge, by practical and mechanical operations. But the world would ſoon be ſenſible of its uſefulneſs; and he flattered himſelf, that a more noble exalted thought never ſprang in any other man's head. Every one knew, how laborious the uſual method is, of attaining to arts and ſciences; whereas, by his contrivance, the moſt ignorant perſon, at a reaſonable charge, and with a little bodily labour,

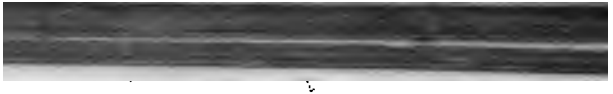
 migh

might write books in philoſophy, poetry, politics, law, mathematics, and theology, without the leaſt aſſiſtance from genius or ſtudy. He then led me to the frame, about the ſides whereof all his pupils ſtood in ranks. It was twenty feet ſquare, placed in the middle of the room. The ſuperficies was compoſed of ſeveral bits of wood about the bigneſs of a dye, but ſome larger than others. They were all linked together by ſlender wires. Theſe bits of wood were covered on every ſquare with paper paſted on them; and on theſe papers were written all the words of their language, in their ſeveral moods, tenſes, and declenſions; but without any order. The profeſſor then deſired me to obſerve; for he was going to ſet his engine at work. The pupils, at his command, took each of them hold of an iron-handle, whereof there were forty fixed round the edges of the frame; and giving them a ſudden turn, the whole diſpoſition of the words was entirely changed. He then commanded ſix and thirty of the lads to read the ſeveral lines ſoftly, as they appeared upon the frame; and where they found three or four words together, that might make part of a ſentence, they dictated to the four remaining boys, who were ſcribes. This work was repeated three or four times, and at every turn the engine was ſo contrived, that the words ſhifted into new places, as the ſquare bits of wood moved upſide down.

Six hours a-day the young ſtudents were employed in this labour, and the profeſſor ſhewed me



A. Ball. Sculp.



me ſeveral volumes in large folio already collected of broken ſentences, which he intended to piece together, and out of thoſe rich materials to give the world a complete body of all arts and ſciences; which however might be ſtill improved, and much expedited, if the public would raiſe a fund for making and employing five hundred ſuch frames in Lagado, and oblige the managers to contribute in common their ſeveral collections.

He aſſured me, that this invention had employed all his thoughts from his youth; that he had emptied the whole vocabulary into his frame, and made the ſtricteſt computation of the general proportion there is in books between the numbers of particles, nouns, and verbs, and other parts of ſpeech *.

I made my humbleſt acknowledgment to this illuſtrious perſon for his great communicativeneſs; and promiſed, if ever I had the good fortune to return to my native country, that I would do him juſtice, as the ſole inventor of this wonderful machine; the form and contrivance of which I deſired leave to delineate upon paper, as in the figure here annexed. I told him, although

* The project for a more eaſy and expeditious method of writing a treatiſe in any ſcience, by a wooden engine, is entertainingly ſatirical; and is aimed at thoſe authors who, inſtead of receiving materials from their own thoughts and obſervations, collect from dictionaries and common-place books, an irregular variety, without order, uſe, or deſign.

Ut nec pes nec caput uni
Reddatur forma. Orrery.

it were the cuſtom of our learned in Europe to ſteal inventions from each other, who had thereby at leaſt this advantage, that it became a controverſy which was the right owner; yet I would take ſuch caution, that he ſhould have the honour entire, without a rival.

We next went to the ſchool of languages, where three profeſſors ſat in conſultation, upon improving that of their own country.

The firſt project was, to ſhorten diſcourſe, by cutting polyſyllables into one, and leaving out verbs and participles; becauſe in reality all things imaginable are but nouns *.

The other project was, a ſcheme for entirely aboliſhing all words whatſoever; and this was urged as a great advantage in point of health, as well as brevity. For it is plain, that every word we ſpeak, is in ſome degree a diminution of our lungs by corroſion; and conſequently contributes to the ſhortening of our lives. An expedient was therefore offered, that ſince words are only names for *things*, it would be more convenient for all men to carry about them ſuch *things* as were neceſſary to expreſs the particular buſineſs they are to diſcourſe on. And this invention would certainly

* This project is pointed at the pernicious cuſtom of contracting the Engliſh language, the dialect of which is naturally harſh, and that harſhneſs is ſtill increaſed by improper contractions. As Swift was ſcrupulouſly exact in the pronunciation of his own tongue, not the leaſt improper expreſſion ever eſcaped his cenſure. And I remember to have ſeen in manuſcript, a dictionary of hard words, compoſed by him for the uſe of his female ſenate. *Orrery.*

tainly have taken place, to the great eaſe as well as health of the ſubject, if the women, in conjunction with the vulgar and illiterate, had not threatened to raiſe a rebellion, unleſs they might be allowed the liberty to ſpeak with their tongues after the manner of their forefathers; ſuch conſtant irreconcileable enemies to ſcience are the common people. However, many of the moſt learned and wiſe adhere to the new ſcheme of expreſſing themſelves by *things*: Which hath only this inconvenience attending it, that if a man's buſineſs be very great, and of various kinds, he muſt be obliged in proportion to carry a greater bundle of *things* upon his back, unleſs he can afford one or two ſtrong ſervants to attend him. I have often beheld two of thoſe ſages almoſt ſinking under the weight of their packs, like pedlars among us; who, when they met in the ſtreets, would lay down their loads, open their facks, and hold converſation for an hour together; then put up their implements, help each other to reſume their burthens, and take their leave.

But for ſhort converſations a man may carry implements in his pockets, and under his arms, enough to ſupply him; and in his houſe he cannot be at a loſs. Therefore the room where company meet who practiſe this art, is full of all *things* ready at hand, requiſite to furniſh matter for this kind of artificial converſe.

Another great advantage propoſed by this invention was, that it would ſerve as an univerſal language to be underſtood in all civilized nations, whoſe goods and utenſils are generally of the ſame kind, or nearly reſembling, ſo that their uſes might eaſily be comprehended. And thus ambaſſadors would be qualified to treat with foreign princes, or miniſters of ſtate, to whoſe tongues they were utter ſtrangers.

I was at the mathematical ſchool, where the maſter taught his pupils after a method ſcarce imaginable to us in Europe. The propoſition and demonſtration were fairly written on a thin wafer, with ink compoſed of a cephalic tincture. This the ſtudent was to ſwallow upon a faſting ſtomach, and for three days following eat nothing but bread and water. As the wafer digeſted, the tincture mounted to his brain, bearing the propoſition along with it. But the ſucceſs hath not hitherto been anſwerable, partly by ſome error in the *quantum* or compoſition, and partly by the perverſeneſs of lads; to whom this bolus is ſo nauſeous, that they generally ſteal aſide and diſcharge it upwards, before it can operate; neither have they been yet perſuaded to uſe ſo long an abſtinence as the preſcription requires.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI *.

A further account of the academy. The author proposes some improvements, which are honourably received.

IN the school of political projectors I was but ill entertained; the professors appearing, in my judgment, wholly out of their senses; which is a scene that never fails to make me melancholy. These unhappy people were proposing schemes for persuading monarchs to chuse favourites upon the score of their wisdom, capacity, and virtue; of teaching ministers to consult the public good; of rewarding merit, great abilities, and eminent services; of instructing princes to know their true interest, by placing it on the same foundation with that of their people; of busing for employments, persons qualified to exercise

* This chapter is full of severity and satire. Sometimes it is erted against the legislative power; sometimes against particur politicians; sometimes against women; and sometimes it deerates into filth. True humour ought to be kept up with decency and dignity, or it loses every tincture of entertainment. escriptions, that shock our delicacy, cannot have the least ood effect upon our minds. They offend us, and we fly precitately from the sight. We cannot stay long enough to examine, hether wit, sense, or morality, may be couched under such lious appearances. I am sorry to say, that these sort of deriptions, which are too often interspersed throughout all wift's works, are seldom written with any other view, or from y other motive, than a wild unbridled indulgence of his own *umour and disposition. Orrery.*

exerciſe them ; with many other wild impoſi chimæras, that never entered before into heart of man to conceive ; and confirmed in the old obſervation, that there is nothing ſo travagant and irrational, which ſome philoſopl have not maintained for truth.

But, however, I ſhall ſo far do juſtice to part of the academy, as to acknowledge, tha of them were not ſo viſionary. There w moſt ingenious doctor, who ſeemed to be fectly verſed in the whole nature and ſyſte government. This illuſtrious perſon had uſefully employed his ſtudies in finding out ef tual remedies for all diſeaſes and corruptions, which the ſeveral kinds of public adminiſtra are ſubject, by the vices or infirmities of thoſe govern, as well as by the licentiouſneſs of t who are to obey. For inſtance ; whereas all ters and reaſoners have agreed, that there ſtrict univerſal reſemblance between the nat and the political body ; can there be any t more evident, than that the health of both n be preſerved, and the diſeaſes cured by the f preſcriptions ? It is allowed, that ſenates great councils are often troubled with redund ebullient, and other peccant humours ; with m diſeaſes of the head, and more of the heart ; v ſtrong convulſions, with grievous contractio the nerves and ſinews in both hands, but eſp ally the right ; with ſpleen, flatus, vertigos, deliriums ; with ſcrophulous tumours, full of fo purulent matter ; with ſour frothy ructatio

mine appetites, and crudeneſs of digeſtion, many others needleſs to mention. This therefore propoſed, that upon the meeta ſenate, certain phyſicians ſhould attend at ee firſt days of their ſitting, and at the f each day's debate, feel the pulſes of every ; after which, having maturely conſider- conſulted upon the nature of the ſeveral es, and the methods of cure, they ſhould fourth day return to the ſenate-houſe, at- by their apothecaries ſtored with proper nes; and before the members ſat, admini- each of them lenitives, aperitives, abſtercorroſives, reſtringents, palliatives, laxa- cephalagics, icterics, apophlegmatics, acous their ſeveral caſes required; and accordtheſe medicines ſhould operate, repeat, alr omit them at the next meeting.

s project could not be of any great expence public, and might, in my poor opinion, much uſe for the diſpatch of buſineſs in countries, where ſenates have any ſhare in giſlative power; beget unanimity, ſhorten s, open a few mouths which are now cloſed cloſe many more which are now open; he petulancy of the young, and correct the eneſs of the old; rouſe the ſtupid, and the pert.

lin; becauſe it is a general complaint, that vourites of princes are troubled with ſhort eak memories; the ſame doctor propoſed, hoever attended a firſt miniſter, after having

ing told his buſineſs with the utmoſt brevity, and in the plaineſt words, ſhould at his departure give the ſaid miniſter a tweak by the noſe, or a kick in the belly, or tread on his corns, or lug him thrice by both ears, or run a pin into his breech, or pinch his arm black and blue, to prevent forgetfulneſs; and at every levee-day, repeat the ſame operation, till the buſineſs were done, or abſolutely refuſed.

He likewiſe directed, that every ſenator in the great council of a nation, after he had delivered his opinion, and argued in the defence of it, ſhould be obliged to give his vote directly contrary; becauſe if that were done, the reſult would infallibly terminate in the good of the public.

When parties in a ſtate are violent, he offered a wonderful contrivance to reconcile them. The method is this: You take an hundred leaders of each party; you diſpoſe them into couples of ſuch, whoſe heads are neareſt of a ſize; then let two nice operators ſaw off the *occiput* of each couple at the ſame time, in ſuch a manner, that the brain may be equally divided. Let the *occiputs* thus cut off be interchanged, applying each to the head of his oppoſite party-man. It ſeems indeed to be a work that requireth ſome exactneſs; but the profeſſor aſſureth us, that if it were dexterouſly performed, the cure would be infallible. For he argued thus; that the two half brains being left to debate the matter between themſelves within the ſpace of one ſcull, would ſoon come to a good underſtanding, and produce that

that moderation, as well as regularity of thinking, ſo much to be wiſhed for in the heads of thoſe, who imagine they come into the world only to watch and govern its motion: And as to the difference of brains in quantity or quality, among thoſe who are directors in faction, the doctor aſſured us, from his own knowledge, that it was a perfect trifle.

I heard a very warm debate between two profeſſors, about the moſt commodious and effectual ways and means of raiſing money without grieving the ſubject. The firſt affirmed, the juſteſt method would be to lay a certain tax upon vices and folly; and the ſum fixed upon every man to be rated after the faireſt manner by a jury of his neighbours. The ſecond was of an opinion directly contrary; to tax thoſe qualities of body and mind, for which men chiefly value themſelves; the rate to be more or leſs, according to the degrees of excelling; the deciſion whereof ſhould be left entirely to their own breaſt. The higheſt tax was upon men, who are the greateſt favourites of the other ſex, and the aſſeſſments according to the number and natures of the favours they have received; for which they are allowed to be their own vouchers. Wit, valour, and politeneſs, were likewiſe propoſed to be largely taxed, and collected in the ſame manner, by every perſon's giving his own word for the *quantum* of what he poſſeſſed. But as to honour, juſtice, wiſdom, and learning, they ſhould not be taxed at all; becauſe they are qualifications of ſo ſingular

gular a kind, that no man will either allow them in his neighbour, or value them in himſelf.

The women were propoſed to be taxed according to their beauty, and ſkill in dreſſing; wherein they had the ſame privilege with the men, to be determined by their own judgment. But conſtancy, chaſtity, good ſenſe, and good nature, were not rated, becauſe they would not bear the charge of collecting.

To keep ſenators in the intereſt of the crown, it was propoſed, that the members ſhould raffle for employments; every man firſt taking an oath, and giving ſecurity, that he would vote for the court, whether he won or no; after which the loſers had in their turn the liberty of raffling upon the next vacancy. Thus hope and expectation would be kept alive; none would complain of broken promiſes, but impute their diſappointments wholly to fortune, whoſe ſhoulders are broader and ſtronger than thoſe of a miniſtry.

Another profeſſor ſhewed me a large paper of inſtructions, for diſcovering plots and conſpiracies againſt the government. He adviſed great ſtateſmen to examine into the diet of all ſuſpected perſons; their times of eating; upon which ſide they lay in bed; with which hand they wipe their poſteriors; to take a ſtrict view of their excrements, and from the colour, the odour, the taſte, the conſiſtence, the crudeneſs, or maturity of digeſtion, form a judgment of the thoughts and deſigns. Becauſe men are never ſo ſerious, thoughtful, and intent, as when they

are at ſtool, which he found by frequent experiment: For in ſuch conjunctures, when he uſed merely as a trial to conſider which was the beſt way of murdering the King, his ordure would have a tincture of green; but quite different, when he thought only of raiſing an inſurrection, or burning the metropolis.

The whole diſcourſe was written with great acuteneſs, containing many obſervations both curious and uſeful for politicians; but, as I conceived, not altogether complete. This I ventured to tell the author, and offered, if he pleaſed, to ſupply him with ſome additions. He received my propoſition with more compliance, than is uſual among writers, eſpecially thoſe of the projecting ſpecies; profeſſing he would be glad to receive further information.

I told him, that in the kingdom of Tribnia, by the natives called Langden, where I had ſojourned ſome time in my travels, the bulk of the people conſiſt in a manner wholly of diſcoverers, witneſſes, informers, accuſers, proſecutors, evidences, ſwearers, together with their ſeveral ſubſervient and ſubaltern inſtruments, all under the colours, the conduct, and pay of miniſters of ſtate and their deputies. The plots in that kingdom are uſually the workmanſhip of thoſe perſons who deſire to raiſe their own characters of profound politicians; to reſtore new vigour to a crazy adminiſtration; to ſtifle or divert general diſcontents; to fill their coffers with forfeitures; and raiſe or ſink the opinion of public credit, as

either ſhall beſt anſwer their private advantage. It is firſt agreed, and ſettled among them, what ſuſpected perſons ſhall be accuſed of a plot; then effectual care is taken to ſecure all their letters and papers, and put the owners in chains.

Theſe papers are delivered to a ſet of artiſts, very dexterous in finding out the myſterious meaning of words, ſyllables, and letters: For inſtance, they can diſcover a cloſeſtool to ſignify a privy-council; a flock of geeſe, a ſenate; a lame dog *, an invader; the plague, a ſtanding army; a buzzard, a prime miniſter; the gout, a high-prieſt: A gibbet, a ſecretary of ſtate; a chamber-pot, a committee of grandees; a ſieve, a court-lady; a broom, a revolution; a mouſe-trap, an employment; a bottomleſs pit, a treaſury; a ſink, a court; a cap and bells, a favourite; a broken reed, a court of juſtice; an empty tun, a general; a running ſore, the adminiſtration.

When this method fails, they have two others more effectual, which the learned among them call *acroſtics* and *anagrams*. *Firſt*, they can decipher all initial letters into political meanings. Thus, *N* ſhall ſignify a plot, *B*, a regiment of horſe, *L*, a fleet at ſea; or, *ſecondly*, by tranſpoſing the letters of the alphabet in any ſuſpected paper, they can lay open the deepeſt deſigns of a diſcontented party. So, for example, if I ſhould ſay in a letter to a friend, *Our brother Tom has juſt*

* See the proceedings againſt Dr Atterbury, biſhop of Rocheſter, State-trials, Vol. VI.

juſt got the piles, a ſkilful decipherer would diſcover, that the ſame letters which compoſe that ſentence may be analized into the following words, *Reſiſt*,——a *plot is brought home*——*The Tour*. And this is the anagrammatic method.

The profeſſor made great acknowledgments for communicating theſe obſervations, and promiſed to make honourable mention of me in his treatiſe.

I ſaw nothing in this country that could invite me to a longer continuance, and began to think of returning home to England.

CHAP. VII *.

The author leaves Lagado, *arrives at* Maldonada. *No ſhip ready. He takes a ſhort voyage to* Glubdubdrib. *His reception by the governor.*

THE continent, of which this kingdom is a part, extends itſelf, as I have reaſon to believe, eaſtward to that unknown tract of America

* Gulliver ſeems to have finiſhed his voyage to Laputa in a careleſs hurrying manner; which makes me almoſt think, that ſometimes he was tired with his work, and attempted to run through it as faſt as he could; otherwiſe why was the curtain dropt ſo ſoon, or why were we deprived of ſo noble a ſcene as might have been diſcovered in the iſland of Glubdubdrib, where the governor, by his ſkill in necromancy, had the power of calling whom he pleaſed from the dead. I have not time by this

weſtward of California, and north to the Pacific ocean, which is not above a hundred and fifty miles from Lagado; where there is a good port, and much commerce with the great iſland of Luggnagg, ſituated to the north-weſt, about 29 degrees north latitude, and 140 longitude. This iſland of Luggnagg ſtands ſouth-eaſtward of Japan, about an hundred leagues diſtant. There is a ſtrict alliance between the Japeneſe Emperor and the King of Luggnagg, which affords frequent opportunities of ſailing from one iſland to the other. I determined therefore to direct my courſe this way, in order to my return to Europe. I hired two mules, with a guide to ſhew me the way, and carry my ſmall baggage. I took leave of my noble protector, who had ſhewn me ſo much favour, and made me a generous preſent at my departure.

My journey was without any accident or adventure worth relating. When I arrived at the port of Maldonada (for ſo it is called) there was no ſhip in the harbour bound for Luggnagg, or like to be in ſome time. The town is about as large as Portſmouth. I ſoon fell into ſome acquaintance, and was very hoſpitably received. A gentleman of diſtinction ſaid to me, that ſince the

this poſt to write to you my thoughts upon a ſubject, which I confeſs awakened, but by no means ſatisfied my curioſity. I lamented to find ſo many illuſtrious ghoſts vaniſh ſo quickly and ſo abruptly from my ſight, many of whom were of the brighteſt characters in hiſtory. In my next letter I ſhall endeavour to detain them a little longer in Leiceſter fields, than Swift ſuffered them to ſtay in the iſland of Sorcerers. Orrery.

the ſhips bound for Luggnagg could not be ready in leſs than a month, it might be no diſagreeable amuſement for me to take a trip to the little iſland of Glubdubdrib, about five leaugues off to the ſouth-weſt. He offered himſelf and a friend to accompany me, and that I ſhould be provided with a ſmall convenient barque for the voyage.

Glubdubdrib, as nearly as I can interpret the word, ſignifies the iſland of Sorcerers or Magicians. It is about one third as large as the iſle of Wight, and extremely fruitful: It is governed by the head of a certain tribe, who are all magicians. This tribe marry only among each other, and the eldeſt in ſucceſſion is prince or governor. He hath a noble palace, and a park of about three thouſand acres, ſurrounded by a wall of hewn ſtone twenty feet high. In this park are ſeveral ſmall incloſures for cattle, corn, and gardening.

The governor and his family are ſerved and attended by domeſtics of a kind ſomewhat unuſual. By his ſkill in necromancy he hath a power of calling whom he pleaſeth from the dead, and commanding their ſervice for twenty-four hours, but no longer; nor can he call the ſame perſons up again in leſs than three months, except upon very extraordinary occaſions.

When we arrived at the iſland, which was about eleven in the morning, one of the gentlemen, who accompanied me, went to the governor, and deſired admittance for a ſtranger, who

came on purpoſe to have the honour of attending on his highneſs. This was immediately granted; and we all three entered the gate of the palace, between two rows of guards armed and dreſſed after a very antic manner, and ſomething in their countenances that made my fleſh creep with a horror I cannot expreſs. We paſſed through ſeveral apartments between ſervants of the ſame ſort, ranked on each ſide as before, till we came to the chamber of preſence, where, after three profound obeiſances and a few general queſtions, we were permitted to ſit on three ſtools near the loweſt ſtep of his highneſs's throne. He underſtood the language of Balnibarbi, although it were different from that of this iſland. He deſired me to give him ſome account of my travels; and, to let me ſee that I ſhould be treated without ceremony, he diſmiſſed all his attendants with a turn of his finger, at which, to my great aſtoniſhment, they vaniſhed in an inſtant, like viſions in a dream, when we awake on a ſudden. I could not recover myſelf in ſome time, till the governor aſſured me, that I ſhould receive no hurt; and obſerving my two companions to be under no concern, who had been often entertained in the ſame manner, I began to take courage, and related to his highneſs a ſhort hiſtory of my ſeveral adventures; yet not without ſome heſitation, and frequently looking behind me to the place where I had ſeen thoſe domeſtic ſpectres. I had the honour to dine with the governor, where a new ſett of

ghoſts

ghoſts ſerved up the meat, and waited at table. I now obſerved myſelf to be leſs terrified, than I had been in the morning. I ſtaid till ſun-ſet, but humbly deſired his highneſs to excuſe me for not accepting his invitation of lodging in the palace. My two friends and I lay at a private houſe in the town adjoining, which is the capital of this little iſland; and the next morning we returned to pay our duty to the governor, as he was pleaſed to command us.

After this manner we continued in the iſland for ten days, moſt part of every day with the governor, and at night in our lodging. I ſoon grew ſo familiarized to the ſight of ſpirits, that after the third or fourth time they gave me no emotion at all; or if I had any apprehenſions left, my curioſity prevailed over them. For his highneſs the governor ordered me to call up whatever perſons I would chuſe to name, and in whatever numbers, among all the dead, from the beginning of the world to the preſent time, and command them to anſwer any queſtions I ſhould think fit to aſk: With this condition, that my queſtions muſt be confined within the compaſs of the times they lived in. And one thing I might depend upon, that they would certainly tell me truth; for lying was a talent of no uſe in the lower world. I made my humble acknowledgements to his highneſs for ſo great a favour *.

We

* I believe it would be impoſſible to find out the deſign of Dr Swift, in ſummoning up a parcel of apparitions, that, from

their

We were in a chamber, from whence there was a fair proſpect into the park. And, becauſe my firſt inclination was to be entertained with ſcenes of pomp and magnificence, I deſired to ſee Alexander the Great, at the head of his army, juſt after the battle of Arbela, which, upon a motion of the governor's finger, immediately appeared in a large field under the window, where we ſtood. Alexander was called up into the room: It was with great difficulty that I underſtood his Greek, and had but little of my own. He aſſured me upon his honour, that he was not poiſoned, but died of a fever by exceſſive drinking *.

Next

their behaviour, or from any thing they ſay, are almoſt of as little conſequence, as the ghoſts in Gay's farce of the *What d'ye call it*. Perhaps Swift's general deſign might be to arraign the conduct of eminent perſons after their death, and to convey their names and images to poſterity, deprived of thoſe falſe colours in which they formerly appeared. If theſe were his intentions, he has miſſed his aim; or at leaſt has been ſo far carried away by his diſpoſition to raillery, that the moral which ought to ariſe from ſuch a fable, is buried in obſcurity. *Orrery.*

* The firſt airy ſubſtance introduced is Alexander the Great. After a hint from Gulliver, that we have loſt the true Greek idiom, the conqueror of the univerſe is made to declare upon his honour, "that he died by exceſſive drinking, not by poiſon." A trifling and an improper obſervation, becauſe the apparition is called up as he appeared at the head of his army, juſt after the battle of Arbela. I own my expectations were great, when I found his appearance was to be at that particular juncture. Or rather I could have wiſhed to have ſeen him after the battle of *ISSUS*, when the temperate uſe which he made of his victory was highly worthy of imitation. Such a circumſtance might have graced his triumph. There are others too in the hiſtorical

Next I ſaw Hannibal paſſing the Alps, who told me, he had not a drop of vinegar in his camp *.

I

hiſtorical records of him, that redound to his honour. The tender regard which he ſhewed to Pindar, by ſparing the houſe of that poet, when he razed the city of Thebes, ſeems to demand perpetual gratitude from all ſucceeding bards. The manner in which he viſited the tomb of Achilles; the affection and reſpect paid by him to Ariſtotle; the undaunted confidence placed in his phyſician Philip, are inſtances ſufficient to ſhew, that Alexander did not want ſome virtues of humanity. And when we conſider ſeveral of his raſh actions of inebriety, they convince us, how far the native excellencies of the mind may be debaſed and changed, by paſſions which too often attend ſucceſs and luxury.

Utcunque defecere mores
Dedecorant bene nata culpæ.

It is evident, that Swift had conceived an abſolute diſguſt to Alexander, whoſe character he aims to deſtroy, by touching it in ſo ſlight a manner, that he puts me in mind of the viſit paid by Auguſtus Cæſar to Alexander's ſepulchre at Alexandria. Upon the Emperor's arrival, the body of the Macedonian hero was found in its full dimenſions, but ſo tender, notwithſtanding all the former embalming, that Cæſar, by touching only the noſe of it, defaced the whole figure immediately. *Orrery.*

In this paſſage there is a peculiar beauty, though it is not diſcovered at an haſty view. The appearance of Alexander with a victorious army, immediately after the battle of Arbela, produces only a declaration that he died by drunkenneſs; thus inadequate and ridiculous, in the eye of reaſon, is the ultimate purpoſe for which Alexander with his army marched into a remote country, ſubverted a mighty empire, and deluged a nation with blood; he gained no more than an epithet to his name, which, after a few repetitions, was no longer regarded even by himſelf; thus the purpoſe of his reſurrection appears to be at leaſt equally important with that of his life, upon which it is a ſatire not more bitter than juſt. *Hawkeſ.*

* Hannibal ſeems to have been ſummoned with no other view than

I ſaw Cæſar and Pompey at the head of t troops, juſt ready to engage. I ſaw the for in his laſt great triumph. I deſired, that the

than to cenſure Livy the hiſtorian. It is not only improl but impoſſible, that Hannibal ſhould have carried a ſuff quantity of vinegar for the purpoſe related by Livy: But negar will certainly ſoften and diſſolve ſtones, the experi might have been improved or ſo contrived by Hannibal, appear to make an eaſy and expeditious opening through particular paſſage already fitted for the purpoſe. Such a practiſed in that age of darkneſs, and properly managed, i have been univerſally received as a kind of miracle: So Livy could ſcarce have avoided inſerting the report as a knowledged truth; eſpecially as the fact itſelf ſeems to that the Romans were invincible, unleſs from ſome ſuperm cauſe. Swift, no friend to military men, thinks the Carı nian general unworthy of any farther notice; and haſtens t up the ſenate of Rome. This gives him an opportunity of very ſevere upon a certain modern aſſembly, which he tre a manner more reſembling the Cynic in his cell, than the humoured Rabelais in his eaſy-chair. *Orrery.*

Livy, the Roman hiſtorian, has related that Hannibal bı great pile of wood upon a rock that ſtopped his paſſage when it was thus heated, poured *vinegar* upon it, by wh was made ſo ſoft as to be eaſily cut through. *Hawkeſ.*

Gulliver's account of his entertainment at Glubdubd ſtrangely and whimſically diverting. Alexander the Gre the head of his army, juſt after the battle of Arbela, a Gulliver upon his honour, that he was not poiſoned, bu of a fever by exceſſive drinking. And afterwards Hanniba ſing the Alps, declared to him, that he had not a drop of gu in his camp. How ridiculous, how contemptible, are plagues of the world, theſe deſtroyers of the human race, ſtripped of their royalty and command, as well as their s to perpetrate any further miſchief!

———*Mors ſola fatetur*
Quantula ſint hominum corpuſcula. Juv. ſat. 10.

mate of Rome might appear before me in one large chamber, and a modern repreſentative in counterview in another. The firſt ſeemed to be an aſſembly of heroes and demi-gods, the other a knot of pedlars, pick-pockets, highwaymen, and bullies.

The governor at my requeſt gave the ſign for Cæſar and Brutus to advance towards us. I was ſtruck with a profound veneration at the ſight of Brutus, and could eaſily diſcover the moſt conſummate virtue, the greateſt intrepidity and firmneſs of mind, the trueſt love of his country and general benevolence for mankind, in every lineament of his countenance. I obſerved with much pleaſure that theſe two perſons were in good intelligence with each other; and Cæſar freely confeſſed to me, that the greateſt actions of his own life were not equal, by many degrees, to the glory of taking it away. I had the honour to have much converſation with Brutus; and was told, that his anceſtor Junius, Socrates, Epaminondas, Cato the younger, Sir Thomas Moore, and himſelf, were perpetually together: A *ſextumvirate*, to which all the ages of the world cannot add a ſeventh *.

It

* Pompey and Cæſar only appear to grace the entry of Brutus, who is Swift's favourite patriot. But as Cæſar generouſly confeſſed to Gulliver, "that the greateſt actions of his life were "not equal, by many degrees, to the glory of taking it away;" it would have been a proper alleviation of the Dictator's crimes, to have acknowledged him the greateſt ſtateſman, orator, and ſoldier of the age in which he lived; an age fertile of eminent men;

It would be tedious to trouble the reader with relating, what vaſt numbers of illuſtrious perſons were called up to gratify that inſatiable deſire I had to

men; an age when ambition was ſcarce looked upon as a crime; and when the Roman virtue (once the ſupport and preſervation of the commonwealth) was long ſince loſt in vice and luxury. At ſuch a time a ſingle maſter was become neceſſary; and Pompey would have ſeized the reins of government, had not Cæſar interpoſed. If the conſpirators had reſtored liberty to their country, their act had been completely glorious, and would have ſhewed that Cæſar, not Rome, was degenerated. But if we may judge from the conſequences, Heaven diſapproved of the deed. A particular fate attended the conſpirators, not one of whom died a natural death. And even Brutus, perhaps recollecting in his laſt moments the benefits which he had received from Cæſar, was ſtaggered in his thoughts of virtue, and imagining himſelf deceived by a ſhadow, broke out into a pathetical expreſſion, ſignifying, "that he had worſhipped virtue as a ſub-"ſtance, and had found it only a ſhadow:" So that he ſeems to have wanted that fortitude of mind, which conſtantly attends true virtue to the grave. This defect in the character of Brutus, is not improperly expreſſed in the famous gallery of the Great Duke of Tuſcany, where there is a very fine head of Brutus, begun by Michael Angelo, but left unfiniſhed: Under it is engraven upon a copper-plate this diſtich:

Dum BRUTI *effigiem ſculptor de marmore ducit,*
In mentem ſceleris venit, et abſtinuit.

If Brutus erred, it was from a wrong notion of virtue. The character of Cæſar is perhaps more amiable, but leſs perfect. His faults were great; however, many of them were foils to his virtues. A modern eminent writer has repreſented him as a glutton. He tells us, that when Cæſar went to the public feaſts, he conſtantly took a vomit in the morning, with a deſign to indulge himſelf with more keenneſs, and to increaſe his appetite for the enſuing feaſt. The fact is true; but I would willingly believe the inference unjuſt. It is more than probable, that he

to ſee the world in every period of antiquity placed before me. I chiefly fed my eyes with beholding the deſtroyers of tyrants and uſurpers,

practiſed this cuſtom by the advice of his phyſicians; who might direct ſuch a regimen, as the moſt certain and immediate preſervation againſt epileptic fits, to which the Dictator was often liable. My honoured father, who was excelled by few phyſicians in the theory of phyſic, has often told me, that thoſe kind of convulſions were of ſuch a nature as generally to come on after eating, and more violently if the ſtomach was overloaded. Cæſar was ſo careful in obſerving a decent dignity in his behaviour, that he dreaded the ſhame of expoſing publicly this weakneſs in his conſtitution; and therefore guarded againſt it in a prudent manner, which has ſince been conſtrued into a reproach. This ſurmiſe reſts upon the ſtrongeſt foundation, as all authors agree, that he was moſt ſtrictly and remarkably abſtemious.

In his public character, Cæſar appears a ſtrong example, how far the greateſt natural and acquired accompliſhments may loſe their luſtre, when made ſubſervient to falſe glory, and an immoderate thirſt of power; as, on the other hand, the hiſtory of Brutus may inſtruct us, what unhappy effects the rigid exertion of ſuperior virtue, when miſapplied and carried too far, may produce in the moſt ſteadfaſt mind, or the ſoundeſt judgment.

Gulliver has given to Brutus five companions, Jun. Brutus, Socrates, Epaminondas, Cato the cenſor, and Sir Thomas Moore. Such a ſextumvirate is not eaſily to be increaſed: Yet let me hope, that the reflection is too ſeverely critical, when he adds, "that all the ages of the world cannot furniſh out a ſe-"venth." Every age has produced men of virtue and abilities in the higheſt degree. The race of mankind, ſince their firſt creation, have been always the ſame. The greateſt characters have been blended with the greateſt faults. Poets and hiſtorians have ſingled out particular perſons for fame and immortality: They have adorned them with accompliſhments which perhaps they never poſſeſſed, while other men, equally meritorious, have been ſilently buried in oblivion, with only the ſelf-conſciouſneſs

and the reſtorers of liberty to the oppreſſed and injured nations. But it is impoſſible to expreſs the ſatisfaction I received in my own mind, after ſuch a manner as to make it a ſuitable entertainment to the reader.

CHAP.

conſciouſneſs of deſerving a rank among the companions of Brutus in the Elyſian fields.

In this illuſtrious ſextumvirate, Socrates and Sir Thomas Moore undoubtedly deſerve the pre-eminence. The extravagant virtue of Junius Brutus is ſhocking to every parent, and every good-natured mind. The important ſervices of the father might juſtly have claimed from the public, the pardon of his ſons: And when his paternal piety had ſaved their lives, his precepts and example might ſo effectually have reclaimed their errors, as to have made them become uſeful members of the commonwealth. I am fully perſuaded, that if Dr Swift had been a father, we ſhould not have found the name of Junius Brutus where it is now placed.

In Epaminondas the Theban glory firſt appeared, and died. His own merit, in overcoming the greateſt difficulties, entirely fixed his reputation. A happy concurrence of circumſtances has often given fame to others; but Epaminondas was indebted for his ſuperior character only to himſelf.

I am in ſome doubt, whether Cato the cenſor can fairly claim a rank among ſo choice a group of ghoſts *. He juſtly indeed condemned the luxury of the Romans, and he puniſhed their vices with an impartial ſeverity. But herein he ſeems to have indulged his own natural temper, rather than to have acted abſolutely from a love of virtue. He was a declared enemy to poetry, painting, and all the politer arts. He was proud, vain, and moroſe. But, above all, he was ſo extremely avaritious, that Rhadamanthus, in the Archbiſhop of Cambray's dialogues of

* *This note of his Lordſhip is an encomium on the judgment of our author, who knew that Cato the cenſor and Cato the younger were very different perſons, and for good reaſons preferred the latter. Hawkeſ.*

CHAP. VIII.

A further account of Glubdubdrib. *Ancient and modern hiſtory corrected.*

HAVING a deſire to ſee thoſe ancients, who were moſt renowned for wit and

of the dead, after expreſſing ſome regard to his merits, tells him, as he was an uſurer, he could not be admitted into the Elyſian fields; and therefore orders him to keep the gate as porter; in which ſituation he might gratify the cenſoriouſneſs of his diſpoſition, by examining every ghoſt that attempted to come into Elyſium, and by ſhutting the door againſt all thoſe who were not qualified for admittance. Rhadamanthus then gives him money, to pay Charon for ſuch paſſengers who were not able to pay for themſelves; and at the ſame time declares, that he will puniſh him as a robber, if he offers to lend out money upon uſury. How very different are the ſentiments of Abp. Fenelon, and of Dr Swift, in their judgment of Cato! The one thinks him unworthy of a place among millions in Elyſium, while the other diſtinguiſhes him among the greateſt men of antiquity. From this diſſenſion of opinions may be traced, perhaps, the particular temper both of the Archbiſhop and of the Dean; and from thence may be deduced the reaſon why the Cenſor was eſteemed by the latter, and condemned by the former. *Orrery.*

The noble author finiſhes his remarks on this ſeventh chapter, by obſerving, that "Gulliver, after having taken a tranſient 'view of numberleſs illuſtrious perſons, whom he does not 'name, cloſes the chapter, and gives him an opportunity of 'finiſhing his letter;" and then addreſſes his ſon thus: "Late, 'very late, may you become a ghoſt! and when one, may you 'equal any of Swift's ſextumvirate! and may his ghoſt (grown

learning, I ſet apart one day on purpoſe. * I propoſed that Homer and Ariſtotle might appear at the head of all their commentators; but theſe were ſo numerous, that ſome hundreds were forced

" leſs cynical and better inſtructed) rejoice to admit you into " the company, from which he has ſo arbitrarily excluded all " future generations."

Gulliver has not excluded all future generations from adding to this ſextumvirate. For he ſpeaks only of the time paſt. What Catos may appear to bleſs the world, and oppoſe the torrent of corruption, in after ages, God only knows. *Swift.*

* Gulliver, tired of heroes, changes the ſcene in this 8th chapter, and becomes curious to know the ſituation of poets and philoſophers, who, in their turn, have as eagerly contended for fame, as Cæſar did for power, or Brutus for liberty. He deſires, that Homer and Ariſtotle may make their appearance at the head of their commentators. " Homer," ſays our traveller, " was the taller and comelier perſon of the two; walked very " erect for one of his age, and his eyes were the moſt quick and " piercing I ever beheld *." It is certain that Homer has rather gained, than loſt vigour by his years. Twenty-ſix centuries have not unbraced his nerves, or given one wrinkle to his brow. And although Gulliver has beſtowed upon him the additional ornament of fine eyes, yet I am apt to think they made the figure of this divine old man leſs awful: At leaſt I am glad that he wanted his eye-ſight while he lived; ſince it is impoſſible not to conclude, from the productions of Homer and Milton, that the *mind's eye* becomes more intenſely diſcerning, when it is not interrupted by external objects. It is an old obſervation, that Homer has nouriſhed more perſons than Sylla, Cæſar, and Auguſtus; and while their pictures have decayed, not a letter of the Iliad has been loſt. The Grecian poet not only preſerves his original form, but breathes freely, and looks beautifully in other languages: A happier metempſychoſis than Pythagoras ever dreamed of. However, if Homer was abſolutely obliged to wear

* *All that is meant by Gulliver is, that Homer had the moſt quick and piercing genius of all human race.* Swift.—See *Criticiſm on Dr Swift's Poems*, Vol. VIII.

forced to attend in the court and outward rooms of the palace. I knew and could diſtinguiſh thoſe two heroes at firſt ſight, not only from the croud,

bear the different dreſſes which have been given to him, he would ſometimes, I believe, find the motion of his limbs uneaſy and confined; and would prefer his own ſimple attire even to the birthday-ſuit which our Engliſh bard has given him. The commentators have done his honour no greater, than the tranſlators. Some of theſe learned pedants have entirely waſted their obſervations upon particles and words; others have run into a minute exactneſs, in comparing the propriety of his images; while others, again, have endeavoured to trace out from the Iliad and Odyſſey, all the rudiments of arts and ſciences. Some there are who dwell on ſuch narrow circumſtances as were neglected by Homer, and can only be ſuitable to their own confined genius. They are not able to purſue him in his ſublime flights, and attempt therefore to bring him upon a level with themſelves. Their low mechanical notions remind me of an abſurd problem, propoſed by the famous Monſ. Huet, whether the Iliad might not be written upon vellum in ſo ſmall a hand, that the whole might be contained within a nut-ſhell? This important queſtion is ſaid to have engaged the thought and attention of the French court, and gives us a true picture of a laborious, taſteleſs critic upon Homer. The Dauphin and his train are for putting the Iliad into a nut-ſhell, when Alexander and his courtiers choſe the richeſt and moſt curious cabinet of Darius, as the only proper repoſitory for Homer's works.

Homer and Ariſtotle were as oppoſite as poſſible in their characters: But Dr Swift has placed them together, chiefly with a view of ſhewing their commentators in that juſt and ridiculous light in which thoſe ſcholiaſts ought to appear. When an age is bleſſed with the productions of an uncommon genius, ſuch as reſembles Homer, it muſt in ſome meaſure be puniſhed by bad imitations and comments; in the ſame manner that you may have obſerved the ſun, by its heat and influence, raiſing vapours and animating inſects, that infect, and perhaps corrupt the air, in which he ſhines with ſo much luſtre. But when an original admired author, as Ariſtotle, is really erroneous, and deceives

with

but from each other. Homer was the taller and comelier perſon of the two, walked very erect for one of his age, and his eyes were the moſt quick and piercing I ever beheld. Ariſtotle ſtooped much, and made uſe of a ſtaff. His viſage was meagre, his hair lank and thin, and his voice hollow *. I ſoon diſcovered that both of

with falſe ſpecious principles, what a train of errors muſt ariſe from commentators on ſuch ſubjects, who, while they endeavour to purſue and extend a pleaſing inchanted project, that has no real foundation, deviate into a dark, diſagreeable road of briers and thorns! ——It is on this account that the Dean has introduced Ariſtotle in company with Homer. *Orrery.*

* This deſcription of Ariſtotle is fine, and in a few words repreſents the true nature of his works. By not having the immortal ſpirit of Homer, he was unable to keep his body erect; and his ſtaff, which feebly ſupported him, like his commentators, made this defect more conſpicuous. He wanted not ſome uſeful qualities; but theſe *real ornaments*, like his hair, were thin and *ungraceful* *. His ſtyle was harſh, and, like his voice, had neither force nor harmony. He was without doubt a man of great genius and penetration; but he did infinitely more prejudice than ſervice to real literature. He ſtudied words more than facts; and delivered his philoſophy perplexed with ſuch intricate logical terms, as have laid a foundation for the endleſs ſcholaſtic diſputations which have corrupted and retarded the progreſs of learning. He waged war with all his predeceſſors. He never quotes an author but with a view to refute his opinion. Like the Ottoman Emperor, he could not reign in ſafety, till he had firſt deſtroyed his brethren. He was as ambitious in ſcience, as his pupil Alexander was in arms. He aimed to be a deſpotic original; and not only to be the prince, but the tyrant of philoſophy. What then can be expected from the commentators

* *In this the noble commentator ſeems to be miſtaken; for it cannot be believed that Ariſtotle's* real ornaments, *however few, were* ungraceful. Hawkeſ.

f them were perfect ſtrangers to the reſt of the mpany, and had never ſeen or heard of them fore. And I had a whiſper from a ghoſt, who ſhall

nmentators of his works, who were devoid of his ingenuity, d poſſeſſed of all his intricate follies? Ramus with his covert orance, and Scotus and Aquinas, with their ſubdiviſions and aginary nothings, muſt make a contemptible figure in the Ely ian fields, which are the ſuppoſed manſions of chearfulneſs, ith, and candour, and conſequently muſt be a very improper nation for that tribe of philoſophers. *Orrery.*

In Gulliver's portrait of Homer we obſerve all the marks and lineations of quickneſs, genius, and fire, accompanied with exquiſite power and felicity, in the communication of his eas, with clearneſs and force, unto the ſouls of his auditors. ift's portrait of Ariſtotle is equally ſtrong and maſterly. He oped much, ſaith he, and made uſe of a ſtaff; that is, he ought, he conſidered, he ruminated, he pondered deeply, on e moſt intricate and abſtruſe points relating to the ſciences: nd, by the force of reaſoning, which is meant by his ſtaff, he leared his way through briers and thorns, until he ſtruck into e road which leads to ſcience and philoſophy.—The remain- g part of Ariſtotle's portrait is only the repreſentation of an bſtracted ſcholar, worn away and decayed with years, hard udy, nocturnal lucubrations, and the want of bodily exerciſe.

Some would make Swift treat Ariſtotle with very little reſpect. But, on the contrary, Swift admired Ariſtotle beyond ll the philoſophers which had appeared in the world, from the ays of Alexander the Great to the moment he was then writ- ing: I had almoſt ſaid, even to the contempt of all others, ot excepting Deſcartes, Gaſſendi, and the famous Sir Iſaac ewton.——From a little book of inſtructions which Dr Swift as pleaſed to draw up for the uſe of a lady, I ſhall, in his own ords, give his real opinion of Ariſtotle. "Ariſtotle, the diſ- ' ciple of Plato, and tutor to Alexander the Great. His fol- ' lowers were called *Peripatetics*, from a Greek word which ' ſignifies *to walk*; becauſe he taught his diſciples *walking*. We ' have not all his works; and ſome of thoſe, which are im-

" puted

ſhall be nameleſs, that theſe commentators always kept in the moſt diſtant quarters from their principals in the lower world, through a conſciouſneſs of ſhame and guilt, becauſe they had ſo horribly miſrepreſented the meaning of authors to poſterity. I introduced Didymus and Euſtathius to Homer, and prevailed on him to treat them better than perhaps they deſerved, for he ſoon found they wanted a genius to enter into the ſpirit of a poet. But Ariſtotle was out of all patience with the account I gave him of Scotus and Ramus, as I preſented them to him, and he aſked them whether the reſt of the tribe were as great dunces as themſelves.

I then deſired the governor to call up Deſcartes and Gaſſendi, with whom I prevailed to explain their ſyſtems to Ariſtotle. This great philoſopher freely acknowledged his own miſtakes in natural philoſophy, becauſe he proceeded in many things upon conjecture, as all men muſt do; and he found, that Gaſſendi, who had made the doctrine of Epicurus as palatable as he could, and the *vortices* of Deſcartes, were equally to be exploded *. He predicted the ſame fate to *attraction*,

" puted to him, are ſuppoſed not genuine. He writ upon " *logic*, or the art of reaſoning; upon *moral* and *natural philo-* " *ſophy*; upon *oratory*, *poetry*, &c. and ſeems to be a perſon of " the *moſt comprehenſive genius that ever lived.*" Swift.

* I believe you will find, that Ariſtotle is ſtill to be preferred to

ruction, whereof the preſent learned are ſuch zealous aſſerters. He ſaid, that new ſyſtems of nature were but new faſhions, which would vary in

Epicurus. The former made ſome uſeful experiments and diſcoveries, and was engaged in a real purſuit of knowledge, although his manner is much perplexed. The latter was full of vanity and ambition. He was an impoſtor, and only aimed at deceiving. He ſeemed not to believe the principles which he has aſſerted. He committed the government of all things to chance. His natural philoſophy is abſurd. His moral philoſophy wants its proper baſis, the fear of God. M. Bayle, one of his warmeſt advocates, is of this laſt opinion, where he ſays, *On ne ſcauroit pas dire aſſez, de bien de l'honneteté de ſes moeurs, ni aſſez de mal de ſes opinions ſur la religion.* His general maxim, that happineſs conſiſted in pleaſure, was too much unguarded, and muſt lay a foundation of a moſt deſtructive practice; although, from his temper and conſtitution, he made his actions ſufficiently pleaſurable to himſelf, and agreeable to the rules of true philoſophy. His fortune exempted him from care and ſolicitude; his valetudinarian habit of body from intemperance. He paſſed the greateſt part of his time in his garden, where he enjoyed all the elegant amuſements of life. There he ſtudied, there he taught his philoſophy. This particular happy ſituation greatly contributed to that tranquillity of mind, and indolence of body, which he made his chief ends. He had not however reſolution ſufficient to meet the gradual approaches of death, and wanted that conſtancy which Sir William Temple aſcribes to him: For, in his laſt moments, when he found that his condition was deſperate, he took ſuch large draughts of wine, that he was abſolutely intoxicated, and deprived of his ſenſes; ſo that he died more like a Bacchanal, than a philoſopher; to which the epigram alludes,

Hinc ſtygias ebrius hauſit aquas.

I ſhould not have ventured into this criticiſm and cenſure upon theſe ancient philoſophers, if my opinion was not in a great meaſure ſupported by Lord Bacon, who, as he was certainly the

in every age; and even thoſe, who pretend to demonſtrate them from mathematical principles, would flouriſh but a ſhort period of time, and be out of vogue when that was determined.

I

the moſt accurate judge of this ſubject, might be perhaps, from that pre-eminence, too ſevere a critic. It muſt be owned, that Epicurus in particular has many followers and admirers among the ancients, and among the moderns. Cicero commends him for cultivating his friendſhips in the moſt exquiſite manner. The book lies open before me, and I will tranſcribe the words. *De qua [amicitia] Epicurus quidem ita dicit, omnium rerum quas ad beate vivendum ſapientia comparaverit, nihil eſſe majus amicitia, nihil uberius, nihil jucundius, neque vero hoc oratione ſolum, ſed multo magis vita, et factis, et moribus comprobavit.* Diogenes Laertius praiſes his virtue and learning. In the Auguſtan age, the greateſt names are inſerted among his followers. Cæſar, Atticus, Mæcenas, Lucretius, Virgil, and Horace, embraced his philoſophy, and gave a luſtre to his ſect and doctrines. Sir William Temple ſays, "That he wonders why ſuch ſharp invectives were ſo generally made againſt Epicurus, by the ages "that followed him; eſpecially as his admirable wit, felicity "of expreſſion, excellence of nature, ſweetneſs of converſation, "temperance of life, and conſtancy of death, made him ſo "much beloved by his friends, admired by his ſcholars, and "honoured by the Athenians." Sir William Temple imputes this injuſtice "to the envy and malignity of the Stoics, and to "ſome groſs pretenders, who aſſumed the denomination of that "ſect; who miſtook his favourite principle," [THAT ALL HAPPINESS CONSISTED IN PLEASURE], "by confining it to ſenſual "pleaſure only. To theſe ſucceeded the Chriſtians, who e-"ſteemed his principles of natural philoſophy more oppoſite to "thoſe of our religion, than either the Platoniſts, the Peripa-"tetics, or even the Stoics themſelves." This is the opinion, and theſe are almoſt the exact words of the great Sir William Temple.

Swift equally explodes Epicurus, and the more modern philoſophers Deſcartes and Gaſſendi.

Deſcartes

I ſpent five days in converſing with many others of the ancient learned. I ſaw moſt of the firſt Roman emperors. I prevailed on the governor to call up Heliogabalus's cooks to dreſs us a dinner; but they could not ſhew us much of their ſkill for want of materials. A *helot* of Ageſilaus made us a diſh of Spartan broth; but I was not able to get down a ſecond ſpoonful.

The two gentlemen who conducted me to the iſland, were preſſed by their private affairs to return in three days, which I employed in ſeeing ſome of the modern dead, who had made the greateſt figure for two or three hundred years paſt in our own and other countries of Europe; and having been always a great admirer of old illuſtrious families, I deſired the governor would call up a dozen or two of kings, with their anceſtors in order for eight or nine generations.

Deſcartes was a knight-errant in philoſophy, perpetually miſtaking windmills for giants; yet, by the ſtrength of a warm imagination, he ſtarted ſome opinions, which probably put Sir Iſaac Newton and others on making many experiments that produced moſt uſeful diſcoveries.

Gaſſendi was eſteemed one of the greateſt ornaments of France. He was a doctor of divinity, and royal profeſſor of mathematics. He was born in Provence in 1592, and died in 1655. With great induſtry he collected whatever related to the perſon and to the philoſophy of Epicurus; the latter of which he has reduced into a complete ſyſtem.

I have now curſorily gone through the characters of ſuch ghoſts, as are nominally ſpecified by Gulliver. I may be wrong either in my account or in my obſervations: And I ſhall rejoice to be confuted by you in any point of learning whatever. *Orrery.*

tions. But my diſappointment was griev
unexpected. For, inſtead of a long tra
royal diadems, I ſaw in one family two
three ſpruce courtiers, and an Italian
In another, a barber, an abbot, and two
nals. I have too great a veneration for
ed heads to dwell any longer on ſo nice a
But as to Counts, Marquiſſes, Dukes,
and the like, I was not ſo ſcrupulous.
confeſs, it was not without ſome pleaſur
I found myſelf able to trace the particul
tures, by which certain families are diſtin
up to their originals. I could plainly di
from whence one family derives a long chi
a ſecond hath abounded with knaves f
generations, and fools for two more;
third happened to be crackbrained, and a
to be ſharpers: whence it came what P
Virgil ſays of a certain great houſe, *A*
fortis, nec fœmina caſta; how cruelty, fal
and cowardice grew to be characteriſt
which certain families are diſtinguiſhed as
as by their coats of arms; who firſt brou
pox into a noble houſe, which hath line
ſcended in ſcrophulous tumours to their po
Neither could I wonder at all this, whe
ſuch an interruption of lineages by pages, la
valets, coachmen, gameſters, fidlers, p
captains, and pickpockets.

I was chiefly diſguſted with modern h
For having ſtrictly examined all the perſ
greateſt name in the courts of princes

hundred years paſt, I found how the world had been miſled by proſtitute writers to aſcribe the greateſt exploits in war to cowards, the wiſeſt counſel to fools, ſincerity to flatterers, Roman virtue to betrayers of their country, piety to atheiſts, chaſtity to ſodomites, truth to informers: How many innocent and excellent perſons had been condemned to death or baniſhment by the practiſing of great miniſters upon the corruption of judges, and the malice of factions: How many villains had been exalted to the higheſt places of truſt, power, dignity, and profit: How great a ſhare in the motions and events of courts, councils, and ſenates, might be challenged by bawds, whores, pimps, paraſites, and buffoons: How low an opinion I had of human wiſdom and integrity, when I was truly informed of the ſprings and motives of great enterpriſes and revolutions in the world, and of the contemptible accidents to which they owed their ſucceſs.

Here I diſcovered the roguery and ignorance of thoſe, who pretend to write *anecdotes*, or ſecret hiſtory; who ſend ſo many kings to their graves with a cup of poiſon; will repeat the diſcourſe between a prince and chief miniſter, where no witneſs was by; unlock the thoughts and cabinets of ambaſſadors and ſecretaries of ſtate; and have the perpetual misfortune to be miſtaken. Here I diſcovered the true cauſes of many great events that have ſurpriſed the world; how a whore can govern the back-ſtairs, the back-ſtairs a council, and the council a ſenate. A

general confeſſed in my preſence, that he got a victory purely by the force of cowardice and ill conduct; and an admiral, that for want of proper intelligence he beat the enemy, to whom he intended to betray the fleet. Three kings proteſted to me, that in their whole reigns they never did once prefer any perſon of merit, unleſs by miſtake, or treachery of ſome miniſter in whom they confided: Neither would they do it if they were to live again; and they ſhewed with great ſtrength of reaſon, that the royal throne could not be ſupported without corruption, becauſe that poſitive, confident, reſtive temper, which virtue infuſed into a man, was a perpetual clog to public buſineſs.

I had the curioſity to enquire in a particular manner, by what method great numbers had procured to themſelves high titles of honour and prodigious eſtates; and I confined my enquiry to a very modern period, however without grating upon preſent times, becauſe I would be ſure to give no offence even to foreigners; for I hope the reader need not to be told, that I do not in the leaſt intend my own country in what I ſay upon this occaſion. A great number of perſons concerned were called up; and upon a very ſlight examination diſcovered ſuch a ſcene of infamy, that I cannot reflect upon it without ſome ſerioufneſs. Perjury, oppreſſion, ſubornation, fraud, pandariſm, and the like *infirmities*, were amongſt the moſt excuſeable arts they had to mention; and for theſe I gave, as it was reaſonable,

ſonable, great allowance. But when ſome confeſſed they owed their greatneſs, and wealth to ſodomy or inceſt; others to the proſtituting of their own wives and daughters; others to the betraying their country or their prince; ſome to poiſoning, more to the perverting of juſtice in order to deſtroy the innocent: I hope I may be pardoned, if theſe diſcoveries inclined me a little to abate of that profound veneration, which I am naturally apt to pay to perſons of high rank, who ought to be treated with the utmoſt reſpect due to their ſublime dignity by us their inferiors.

I had often read of ſome great ſervices done to princes and ſtates, and deſired to ſee the perſons, by whom thoſe ſervices were performed. Upon enquiry I was told, that their names were to be found on no record, except a few of them, whom hiſtory hath repreſented as the vileſt rogues and traitors. As to the reſt, I had never once heard of them. They all appeared with dejected looks, and in the meaneſt habit, moſt of them telling me they died in poverty and diſgrace, and the reſt on a ſcaffold or a gibbet.

Among others there was one perſon, whoſe caſe appeared a little ſingular. He had a youth about eighteen years old ſtanding by his ſide. He told me he had for many years been commander of a ſhip; and in the ſea-fight at Actium had the good fortune to break through the enemy's great line of battle, ſink three of their capital ſhips, and take a fourth, which was the ſole cauſe of Anthony's flight, and of the victory

that enſued; that the youth ſtanding by him, his only ſon, was killed in the action. He added, that upon the confidence of ſome merit, the war being at an end, he went to Rome, and ſolicited at the court of Auguſtus to be preferred to a greater ſhip, whoſe commander had been killed; but without any regard to his pretenſions, it was given to a boy, who had never ſeen the ſea, the ſon of Libertina, who waited on one of the Emperor's miſtreſſes. Returning back to his own veſſel, he was charged with neglect of duty, and the ſhip given to a favourite page of Publicola, the vice-admiral; whereupon he retired to a poor farm at a great diſtance from Rome, and there ended his life. I was ſo curious to know the truth of this ſtory, that I deſired Agrippa might be called, who was admiral in that fight. He appeared, and confirmed the whole account, with much more advantage to the captain, whoſe modeſty had extenuated or concealed a great part of his merit.

I was ſurpriſed to find corruption grown ſo high and ſo quick in that empire, by the force of luxury ſo lately introduced, which made me leſs wonder at many parallel caſes in other countries, where vices of all kinds have reigned ſo much longer, and where the whole praiſe, as well as pillage, hath been engroſſed by the chief commander, who perhaps had the leaſt title to either.

As every perſon called up made exactly the ſame appearance he had done in the world, it gave me melancholy reflections to obſerve, how much

much the race of human kind was degenerated among us within theſe hundred years paſt. How the pox, under all its conſequences and denominations, had altered every lineament of an Engliſh countenance; ſhortened the ſize of bodies, unbraced the nerves, relaxed the ſinews and muſcles, introduced a ſallow complection, and rendered the fleſh looſe and *rancid*.

I deſcended ſo low as to deſire, that ſome Engliſh yeomen of the old ſtamp might be ſummoned to appear; once ſo famous for the ſimplicity of their manners, diet, and dreſs; for juſtice in their dealings; for their true ſpirit of liberty; for their valour and love of their country. Neither could I be wholly unmoved, after comparing the living with the dead, when I conſidered how all theſe pure native virtues were proſtituted for a piece of money by their grandchildren, who, in ſelling their votes, and managing at elections, have acquired every vice and corruption that can poſſibly be learned in a court.

CHAP. IX.

The author returns to Maldonada. *Sails to the kingdom of* Luggnagg. *The author confined. He is ſent for to court. The manner of his admittance. The King's great lenity to his ſubjects.*

THE day of our departure being come, I took leave of his highneſs, the governor of Glubdubdribb, and returned with my two

companions to Maldonada, where, after a fortnight's waiting, a ſhip was ready to ſail for Luggnagg. The two gentlemen, and ſome others, were ſo generous and kind as to furniſh me with proviſions, and ſee me on board. I was a month on this voyage. We had one violent ſtorm, and were under a neceſſity of ſteering weſtward to get into the trade-wind, which holds for above ſixty leagues. On the 21ſt of April 1708, we ſailed into the river of Clumegnig, which is a ſea-port town at the ſouth-eaſt point of Luggnagg. We caſt anchor within a league of the town, and made a ſignal for a pilot. Two of them came on board in leſs than half an hour, by whom we were guided between certain ſhoals and rocks, which are very dangerous in the paſſage, to a large baſin, where a fleet may ride in ſafety within a cable's length of the town-wall.

Some of our ſailors, whether out of treachery or inadvertence, had informed the pilots that I was a ſtranger, and a great traveller; whereof theſe gave notice to a cuſtom-houſe officer, by whom I was examined very ſtrictly upon my landing. This officer ſpoke to me in the language of Balnibarbi, which, by the force of much commerce, is generally underſtood in that town, eſpecially by ſeamen, and thoſe employed in the cuſtoms. I gave him a ſhort account of ſome particulars, and made my ſtory as plauſible and conſiſtent as I could; but I thought it neceſſary to diſguiſe my country, and call myſelf an Hollander, becauſe my intentions were for Japan, and I knew

the Dutch were the only Europeans permitted to enter into that kingdom. I therefore told the officer, that having been ſhipwrecked on the coaſt of Balnibarbi, and caſt on a rock, I was received up into Laputa, or the flying iſland (of which he had often heard) and was now endeavouring to get to Japan, from whence I might find a convenience of returning to my own country. The officer ſaid, I muſt be confined till he could receive orders from court, for which he would write immediately, and hoped to receive an anſwer in a fortnight. I was carried to a convenient lodging with a centry placed at the door; however, I had the liberty of a large garden, and was treated with humanity enough, being maintained all the time at the King's charge. I was invited by ſeveral perſons, chiefly out of curioſity, becauſe it was reported that I came from countries very remote, of which they had never heard.

I hired a young man, who came in the ſame ſhip, to be an interpreter; he was a native of Luggnagg, but had lived ſome years at Maldonada, and was a perfect maſter of both languages. By his aſſiſtance I was able to hold a converſation with thoſe who came to viſit me; but this conſiſted only of their queſtions and my anſwers.

The diſpatch came from court about the time we expected. It contained a warrant for conducting me and my retinue to Traldragdub, or Trildrogdrib, for it is pronounced both ways, as near as I can remember, by a party of ten horſe

horſe. All my retinue was that poor lad for an interpreter, whom I perſuaded into my ſervice; and at my humble requeſt we had each of us a mule to ride on. A meſſenger was diſpatched half a day's journey before us to give the King notice of my approach, and to deſire that his Majeſty would pleaſe to appoint a day and hour, when it would be his gracious pleaſure that I might have the honour to *lick the duſt before his foot-ſtool.* This is the court ſtyle, and I found it to be more than matter of form. For, upon my admittance, two days after my arrival, I was commanded to crawl upon my belly, and lick the floor as I advanced; but, on account of my being a ſtranger, care was taken to have it made ſo clean, that the duſt was not offenſive. However, this was a peculiar grace, not allowed to any but perſons of the higheſt rank, when they deſire an admittance. Nay, ſometimes the floor is ſtrewed with duſt on purpoſe, when the perſon to be admitted happens to have powerful enemies at court. And I have ſeen a great lord with his mouth ſo crammed, that, when he had crept to the proper diſtance from the throne, he was not able to ſpeak a word. Neither is there any remedy; becauſe it is capital for thoſe who receive an audience, to ſpit or wipe their mouths in his Majeſty's preſence. There is indeed another cuſtom which I cannot altogether approve of: When the King had a mind to put any of his nobles to death in a gentle, indulgent manner, he commands the floor to be ſtrewed with a certain

brown

brown powder of a deadly compoſition, which being licked up, infallibly kills him in twenty-four hours. But in juſtice to this prince's great clemency, and the care he hath of his ſubjects lives (wherein it were much to be wiſhed that the monarchs of Europe would imitate him) it muſt be mentioned for his honour, that ſtrict orders are given to have the infected parts of the floor well waſhed after every ſuch execution; which if his domeſtics neglect, they are in danger of incurring his royal diſpleaſure. I myſelf heard him give directions that one of his pages ſhould be whipt, whoſe turn it was to give notice about waſhing the floor after an execution, but maliciouſly had omitted it; by which neglect a young lord, of great hopes, coming to an audience, was unfortunately poiſoned, although the King at that time had no deſign againſt his life. But this good prince was ſo gracious, as to forgive the poor page his whipping, upon promiſe that he would do ſo no more without ſpecial orders.

To return from this digreſſion: When I had crept within four yards of the throne, I raiſed myſelf gently upon my knees, and then ſtriking my forehead ſeven times againſt the ground, I pronounced the following words, as they had been taught me the night before, *Ickpling gloffthrobb ſqut ſerumm blhiop mlaſhnalt zwin tnodbalkuffh ſlhiophad gurdlubb aſht.* This is the compliment eſtabliſhed by the laws of the land for all perſons admitted to the King's preſence. It may be rendered into Engliſh thus: *May your celeſtial Majeſty*

Majeſty outlive the ſun eleven moons and a ha
To this the King returned ſome anſwer, whi
although I could not underſtand, yet I replied
I had been directed: *Flute drin yalerick dwuldo*
praſtrad mirpuſh, which properly ſignifies, *I*
tongue is in the mouth of my friend; and by th
expreſſion was meant, that I deſired leave to bri
my interpreter; whereupon the young man
ready mentioned was accordingly introduced, I
whoſe intervention I anſwered as many queſtion
as his Majeſty could put in above an hour.
ſpoke in the Balnibarbian tongue, and my int
preter delivered my meaning in that of Lag
nagg.

The King was much delighted with my co
pany, and ordered his Bliffmarklub, or hi
chamberlain, to appoint a lodging in the cou
for me and my interpreter, with a daily allo
ance for my table, and a large purſe of gold f
my common expences.

I ſtaid three months in this country out of pe
fect obedience to his Majeſty, who was pleaſ
highly to favour me, and made me very honou
able offers. But I thought it more conſiſte
with prudence and juſtice to paſs the remaind
of my days with my wife and family.

CHA

CHAP. X.

Luggnuggians commended. A particular description of the Struldbrugs, *with many conversations between the author and ſome eminent perſons on that ſubject.*

THE Luggnuggians are a polite and generous people; and although they are not out ſome ſhare of that pride, which is peculiar to all *eaſtern* countries, yet they ſhew themſelves courteous to ſtrangers, eſpecially ſuch who countenanced by the court. I had many acquaintances among perſons of the beſt faſhion; being always attended by my interpreter, the converſation we had was not diſagreeable.

One day, in much good company, I was aſked by a perſon of quality, whether I had ſeen any of their Struldbrugs or immortals. I ſaid, I had; and deſired he would explain to me, what he meant by ſuch an appellation applied to a mortal creature *. He told me, that ſometimes, though

* The deſcription of the Struldbrugs is an inſtructive piece of morality. For if we conſider it in a ſerious light, it tends to reconcile us to our final diſſolution. Death, when ſet in competition with the immortality of the Struldbrugs, is no longer the object of terrors: He loſes his ſting; he appears to us as a friend; and we chearfully obey his ſummons, becauſe it brings certain relief to the greateſt miſeries. It is in this deſcription that Swift ſhines in a particular manner. He probably felt in himſelf

though very rarely, a child happened to be born in a family with a red circular ſpot in the forehead, directly over the left eye-brow, which was an infallible mark that it ſhould never die. The ſpot, as he deſcribed it, was about the compaſs of

ſelf the effects of approaching age, and tacitly dreaded that period of life in which he might become a repreſentative of thoſe *miſerable immortals*. His apprenſions were unfortunately fulfilled. He lived to be the moſt melancholy ſight that was ever beheld. Yet, even in that condition, he continued to inſtruct, by appearing a preſidential inſtance to mortify the vanity which is too apt to ariſe in the human breaſt. Our life cannot be pronounced happy, till the laſt ſcene is cloſed with eaſe and reſignation; the mind ſtill continuing to preſerve its uſual dignity, and falling into the arms of death, as a wearied traveller ſinks into reſt. This is that *euthanaſia* which Auguſtus often deſired, which Antonius Pius enjoyed, and for which every wiſe man will pray. *Orrery.*

Gulliver's account of the Struldbrugs is the fineſt lecture that ever was conceived by any mortal man, to reconcile poor tottering creatures into a chearful reſignation of this wretched life; and perfectly agreeable to that ſentiment of the inſpired prophet, *The days of our life are threeſcore years and ten; and though men be ſo ſtrong, that they live to fourſcore years; yet is their life then but labour and ſorrow.* Thoſe diſpenſations of the Almighty, which are frequently the concomitants of old age, Dr Swift, throughout his whole life, conſtantly apprehended, from ſome peculiar infirmities attending his habit of body, would ſeize upon him at laſt. Theſe Lord Orrery, without any ſort of heſitation, roundly aſſerts to be the avenging judgments of God, as if he had been let into the ſecret by ſome particular revelation. But, inſtead of inſulting the aſhes of ſo bright a genius with the infirmities of his latter days, and comparing him to one of his own Struldbrugs, we ſhould endeavour to inflame our ſouls, by catching fire, and ſpirit, and patriotiſm, from his inimitable writings; and ſilently confeſs the ways of God to be inſcrutable, and his judgments paſt finding out. *Swift.*

a ſilver three-pence, but in the courſe of time grew larger, and changed its colour; for at twelve years old it became green, ſo continued till five and twenty, then turned to a deep blue; at five and forty it grew coal-black, and as large as an Engliſh ſhilling; but never admitted any farther alteration. He ſaid, theſe births were ſo rare, that he did not believe there could be above eleven hundred Struldbrugs of both ſexes in the whole kingdom, of which he computed about fifty in the metropolis, and among the reſt a young girl, born about three years ago: That theſe productions were not peculiar to any family, but a mere effect of chance; and the children of the Struldbrugs themſelves were equally mortal with the reſt of the people.

I freely own myſelf to have been ſtruck with inexpreſſible delight upon hearing this account: And the perſon who gave it me, happening to underſtand the Balnibarbian language, which I ſpoke very well, I could not forbear breaking out into expreſſions perhaps a little too extravagant. I cried out, as in a rapture, Happy nation, where every child hath at leaſt a chance for being immortal! Happy people, who enjoy ſo many living examples of ancient virtue, and have maſters ready to inſtruct them in the wiſdom of all former ages! But, happieſt beyond all compariſon are thoſe excellent Struldbrugs, who being born exempt from that univerſal calamity of human nature, have their minds free and diſengaged, without the weight and depreſſion of ſpi-

rits cauſed by the continual apprehenſion of death. I diſcovered my admiration, that I had not obſerved any of theſe illuſtrious perſons at court; the black ſpot on the forehead being ſo remarkable a diſtinction, that I could not have eaſily overlooked it: And it was impoſſible that his Majeſty, a moſt judicious prince, ſhould not provide himſelf with a good number of ſuch wiſe and able counſellors. Yet perhaps the virtue of thoſe reverend ſages was too ſtrict for the corrupt and libertine manners of a court. And we often find by experience, that young men are too opinionative and volatile to be guided by the ſober dictates of their ſeniors. However, ſince the King was pleaſed to allow me acceſs to his royal perſon, I was reſolved, upon the very firſt occaſion, to deliver my opinion to him in this matter freely and at large, by the help of my interpreter; and whether he would pleaſe to take my advice or no, yet in one thing I was determined, that, his Majeſty having frequently offered me an eſtabliſhment in this country, I would with great thankfulneſs accept the favour, and paſs my life here in the converſation of thoſe ſuperior beings, the Struldbrugs, if they would pleaſe to admit me.

The gentleman to whom I addreſſed my diſcourſe, becauſe (as I have already obſerved) he ſpoke the language of Balnibarbi, ſaid to me with a ſort of a ſmile, which uſually ariſeth from pity to the ignorant, that he was glad of any occaſion to keep me among them, and deſired my permiſſion to explain to the company what I had

had ſpoke. He did ſo, and they talked together for ſome time in their own language, whereof I underſtood not a ſyllable; neither could I obſerve, by their countenances, what impreſſion my diſcourſe had made on them. After a ſhort ſilence, the ſame perſon told me, that his friends and mine (ſo he thought fit to expreſs himſelf) were very much pleaſed with the judicious remarks I had made on the great happineſs and advantages of immortal life; and they were deſirous to know in a particular manner, what ſcheme of living I ſhould have formed to myſelf if it had fallen to my lot to have been born a Struldbrug.

I anſwered, it was eaſy to be eloquent on ſo copious and delightful a ſubject, eſpecially to me, who had been often apt to amuſe myſelf with viſions of what I ſhould do, if I were a king, a general, or a great lord; and upon this very caſe, I frequently run over the whole ſyſtem how I ſhould employ myſelf, and paſs the time, if I were ſure to live for ever.

That, if it had been my good fortune to come into the world a Struldbrug, as ſoon as I could diſcover my own happineſs, by underſtanding the difference between life and death, I would firſt reſolve by all arts and methods whatſoever, to procure myſelf riches. In the purſuit of which, by thrift and management, I might reaſonably expect in about two hundred years to be the wealthieſt man in the kingdom. In the ſecond place, I would from my earlieſt youth apply my-

ſelf to the ſtudy of arts and ſciences, by which I ſhould arrive in time to excel all others in learning. Laſtly, I would carefully record every action and event of conſequence that happened in the public, impartially draw the characters of the ſeveral ſucceſſions of princes and great miniſters of ſtate, with my own obſervations on every point. I would exactly ſet down the ſeveral changes in cuſtoms, language, faſhions of dreſs, diet and diverſions. By all which acquirements I ſhould be a living treaſury of knowledge and wiſdom, and certainly become the oracle of the nation.

I would never marry after threeſcore, but live in an hoſpitable manner, yet ſtill on the ſaving ſide. I would entertain myſelf in forming and directing the minds of hopeful young men, by convincing them from my own remembrance, experience, and obſervation, fortified by numerous examples, of the uſefulneſs of virtue in public and private life. But my choice and conſtant companions ſhould be a ſett of my own immortal brotherhood, among whom I would elect a dozen from the moſt ancient down to my own contemporaries. Where any of theſe wanted fortunes, I would provide them with convenient lodges round my own eſtate, and have ſome of them always at my table, only mingling a few of the moſt valuable among you mortals, whom length of time would harden me to loſe with little or no reluctance, and treat your poſterity after the ſame manner; juſt as a man diverts

diverts himſelf with the annual ſucceſſion of pinks and tulips in his garden, without regretting the loſe of thoſe which withered the preceding year.

Theſe Struldbrugs and I would mutually communicate our obſervations and memorials through the courſe of time; remark the ſeveral gradations by which corruption ſteals into the world, and oppoſe it in every ſtep, by giving perpetual warning and inſtruction to mankind; which, added to the ſtrong influence of our own example, would probably prevent that continual degeneracy of human nature ſo juſtly complained of in all ages.

Add to all this the pleaſure of ſeeing the various revolutions of ſtates and empires; the changes in the lower and upper world; ancient cities in ruins, and obſcure villages become the ſeats of kings; famous rivers leſſening into ſhallow brooks; the ocean leaving one coaſt dry, and overwhelming another; the diſcovery of many countries yet unknown; barbarity over-running the politeſt nations, and the moſt barbarous become civilized. I ſhould then ſee the diſcovery of the *longitude*, the *perpetual motion*, the *univerſal medicine*, and many other great inventions brought to the utmoſt perfection.

What wonderful diſcoveries ſhould we make in aſtronomy, by out-living and confirming our own predictions, by obſerving the progreſs and returns of comets, with the changes of motion in the ſun, moon, and ſtars.

I enlarged upon many other topics, which the natural deſire of endleſs life and ſublunary happineſs could eaſily furniſh me with. When I had ended, and the ſum of my diſcourſe had been interpreted, as before, to the reſt of the company, there was a good deal of talk among them in the language of the country, not without ſome laughter at my expence. At laſt the ſame gentleman, who had been my interpreter, ſaid he was deſired by the reſt to ſet me right in a few miſtakes, which I had fallen into, through the common imbecillity of human nature, and upon that allowance was leſs anſwerable for them. That this breed of Struldbrugs was peculiar to their country; for there were no ſuch people either in Balnibarbi or Japan, where he had the honour to be ambaſſador from his Majeſty, and found the natives in both thoſe kingdoms very hard to believe that the fact was poſſible; and it appeared from my aſtoniſhment, when he firſt mentioned the matter to me, that I received it as a thing wholly new, and ſcarcely to be credited. That in the two kingdoms above mentioned, where during his reſidence he had converſed very much, he obſerved long life to be the univerſal deſire and wiſh of mankind. That whoever had one foot in the grave, was ſure to hold back the other as ſtrongly as he could. That the oldeſt had ſtill hopes of living one day longer, and looked on death as the greateſt evil, from which nature always prompted him to retreat; only in this iſland of Luggnagg, the appetite

for living was not ſo eager, from the con-
example of the Struldbrugs before their

it the ſyſtem of living contrived by me was
onable and unjuſt; becauſe it ſuppoſed a
uity of youth, health, and vigour, which
n could be ſo foolish to hope, however
agant he may be in his wiſhes *. That the
on therefore was not, whether a man
chuſe to be always in the prime of youth,
ed with proſperity and health; but how
uld paſs a perpetual life under all the uſual
antages which old age brings along with
or although few men will avow their de-
f being immortal upon ſuch hard condi-
yet in the two kingdoms before mentioned,
nibarbi and Japan, he obſerved that every
leſired to put off death for ſome time long-
t it approach ever ſo late; and he rarely
of any man who died willingly, except
ere excited by the extremity of grief or
e. And he appealed to me, whether in
countries I had travelled, as well as my
own,

this it may poſſibly be objected, That the perpetuity of
health, and vigour, would be leſs a prodigy, than the per-
of life in a body ſubject to gradual decay, and might
e be hoped without greater extravagance of folly. But
iment here expreſſed, is that of a being to whom im-
ty, though not perpetual youth, was familiar; and in
he wiſh of perpetual youth only would have been extra-
becauſe that only appeared from facts to be impoſſible.

own, I had not obſerved the ſame general diſpoſition *.

After this preface, he gave me a particular account of the Struldbrugs among them. He ſaid, they commonly acted like mortals, till about thirty years old, after which by degrees they grew melancholy and dejected, increaſing in both till they came to fourſcore. This he learned from their own confeſſion; for otherwiſe, there not being above two or three of that ſpecies born in an age, they were too few to form a general obſervation by. When they came to fourſcore years, which is reckoned the extremity of living in this country, they had not only all the follies and infirmities of other old men, but many more, which aroſe from the dreadful proſpect of never dying. They were not only opinionative, peeviſh, covetous, moroſe, vain, talkative; but incapable of friendſhip, and dead to all natural affection, which never deſcended below their

* If it be ſaid, That although the folly of deſiring life to be prolonged under the diſadvantages of old age, is here finely expoſed; yet the deſire of terreſtrial immortality upon terms, on which alone, in the nature of things, it is poſſible, an exemption from diſeaſe, accident, and decay, is tacitly allowed: It may be anſwered, That as we grow old by imperceptible degrees, ſo for the moſt part we grow old without repining, and every man is ready to profeſs himſelf willing to die, when he ſhall be overtaken by the decrepitude of age in ſome future period; yet when every other eye ſees that this period is arrived, he is ſtill tenacious of life, and murmurs at the condition upon which he received his exiſtence. To reconcile old age therefore to the thoughts of a diſſolution, appears to be all that was neceſſary in a moral writer for practical purpoſes. *Hawkeſ.*

ir grandchildren. Envy and impotent de-
es are their prevailing paſſions. But thoſe
jects, againſt which their envy ſeems princi-
ly directed, are the vices of the younger ſort,
d the deaths of the old. By reflecting on the
mer, they find themſelves cut off from all poſſi-
ity of pleaſure; and whenever they ſee a fune-
, they lament and repine that others are gone
an harbour of reſt, to which they themſelves
ver can hope to arrive. They have no re-
mbrance of any thing, but what they learned
d obſerved in their youth and middle age,
d even that is very imperfect: And for the
th or particulars of any fact, it is ſafer to de-
nd on common tradition, than upon their beſt
ollections. The leaſt miſerable among them
pear to be thoſe who turn to dotage, and in-
ly loſe their memories; theſe meet with more
y and aſſiſtance, becauſe they want many bad
alities which abound in others.

If a Struldbrug happen to marry one of his
n kind, the marriage is diſſolved of courſe
the courteſy of the kingdom, as ſoon as the
unger of the two comes to be fourſcore. For
law thinks it is a reaſonable indulgence, that
ſe who are condemned without any fault of
ir own to a perpetual continuance in the
rld, ſhould not have their miſery doubled
the load of a wife.

As ſoon as they have completed the term of
nty years, they are looked on as dead in law;
ir heirs immediately ſucceed to their eſtates,
only

only a ſmall pittance is reſerved for their ſupport; and the poor ones are maintained at the public charge. After that period, they are held incapable of any employment of truſt or profit; they cannot purchaſe lands, or take leaſes; neither are they allowed to be witneſſes in any cauſe, either civil or criminal, not even for the deciſion of meers and bounds.

At ninety, they loſe their teeth and hair; they have at that age no diſtinction of taſte, but eat and drink whatever they can get, without reliſh or appetite. The diſeaſes they were ſubject to ſtill continue, without increaſing or diminiſhing. In talking, they forget the common appellation of things, and the names of perſons, even of thoſe who are their neareſt friends and relations. For the ſame reaſon they never can amuſe themſelves with reading, becauſe their memory will not ſerve to carry them from the beginning of a ſentence to the end; and by this defect they are deprived of the only entertainment, whereof they might otherwiſe be capable.

The language of this country being always upon the flux, the Struldbrugs of one age do not underſtand thoſe of another; neither are they able, after two hundred years to hold any converſation (farther than by a few general words) with their neighbours, the mortals; and thus they lie under the diſadvantage of living like foreigners in their own country.

This was the account given me of the Struldbrugs, as near as I can remember. I afterwards

ſaw

ſaw five or ſix of different ages, the youngeſt not above two hundred years old, who were brought to me at ſeveral times by ſome of my friends; but although they were told that I was a great traveller, and had ſeen all the world, they had not the leaſt curioſity to aſk me a queſtion; only deſired I would give them *ſlumſkudaſk*, or a token of remembrance; which is a modeſt way of begging, to avoid the law that ſtrictly forbids it, becauſe they are provided for by the public, although indeed with a very ſcanty allowance.

They are deſpiſed and hated by all ſorts of people. When one of them is born, it is reckoned ominous, and their birth is recorded very particularly; ſo that you may know their age by conſulting the regiſter; which however hath not been kept above a thouſand years paſt, or at leaſt hath been deſtroyed by time or public diſturbances. But the uſual way of computing how old they are, is by aſking them what kings or great perſons they can remember, and then conſulting hiſtory; for infallibly the laſt prince in their mind did not begin his reign after they were fourſcore years old.

They were the moſt mortifying ſight I ever beheld; and the women more horrible than the men. Beſides the uſual deformities in extreme old age, they acquired an additional ghaſtlineſs in proportion to their number of years, which is not to be deſcribed; and among half a dozen I ſoon diſtinguiſhed which was the eldeſt, altho' there

there was not above a century or two between them.

The reader will eaſily believe, that from what I had heard and ſeen, my keen appetite for perpetuity of life was much abated. I grew heartily aſhamed of the pleaſing viſions I had formed; and thought no tyrant could invent a death, into which I would not run with pleaſure from ſuch a life. The King heard of all that had paſſed between me and my friends upon this occaſion, and rallied me very pleaſantly; wiſhing I could ſend a couple of Struldbrugs to my own country, to arm our people againſt the fear of death *; but this it ſeems is forbidden by the fundamental laws of the kingdom, or elſe I ſhould have been well content with the trouble and expence of tranſporting them.

I could not but agree, that the laws of the kingdom relating to the Struldbrugs were founded upon the ſtrongeſt reaſons, and ſuch as any other country would be under the neceſſity of enacting in the like circumſtances. Otherwiſe, as avarice is the neceſſary conſequent of old age, thoſe immortals would in time become proprietors of the whole nation, and engroſs the civil power; which, for want of abilities to manage, muſt end in the ruin of the public.

* Perhaps it may not be wholly uſeleſs to remark, that the ſight of a Struldbrug would no otherwiſe arm thoſe againſt the fear of death, who have no hope beyond it, than a man is armed againſt the fear of breaking his limbs, who jumps out of a window when his houſe is on fire. *Hawkeſ.*

CHAP. XI.

The author leaves Luggnagg, *and ſails to* Japan. *From thence he returns in a* Dutch *ſhip to* Amſterdam, *and from* Amſterdam *to* England.

I Thought this account of the Struldbrugs might be ſome entertainment to the reader, becauſe it ſeems to be a little out of the common way; at leaſt I do not remember to have met the like in any book of travels, that hath come to my hands: And if I am deceived, my excuſe muſt be, that it is neceſſary * for travellers, who deſcribe the ſame country, very often to agree in dwelling on the ſame particulars, without deſerving the cenſure of having borrowed or tranſcribed from thoſe who wrote before them.

There is indeed a perpetual commerce between this kingdom and the great empire of Japan; and it is very probable, that the Japaneſe authors may have given ſome account of the Struldbrugs; but my ſtay in Japan was ſo ſhort, and I was ſo entirely a ſtranger to the language, that I was not

* The word *neceſſary* is here uſed in the ſame manner, as when by the idiom of our language it means *convenient*, though it is to be underſtood in its proper and original ſignification. "Travellers who deſcribe the ſame country, very often *neceſſarily* "agree in dwelling on the ſame particulars, and therefore *do not* "*deſerve* the cenſure of having borrowed," *&c.* *Hawkeſ.*

qualified to make any enquiries. But I hope the Dutch, upon this notice, will be curious and able enough to ſupply my defects.

His Majeſty having often preſſed me to accept ſome employment in his court, and finding me abſolutely determined to return to my native country, was pleaſed to give me his licence to depart, and honoured me with a letter of recommendation under his own hand to the Emperor of Japan. He likewiſe preſented me with four hundred forty-four large pieces of gold (this nation delighting in even numbers) and a red diamond, which I ſold in England for eleven hundred pounds.

On the 6th day of May 1709, I took a ſolemn leave of his Majeſty and all my friends. This prince was ſo gracious, as to order a guard to conduct me to Glanguenſtald, which is a royal port to the ſouth-weſt part of the iſland. In ſix days I found a veſſel ready to carry me to Japan, and ſpent fifteen days in the voyage. We landed at a ſmall port-town called Xamoſchi, ſituated on the *ſouth-eaſt* part of Japan; the town lies on the *weſtern* point, where there is a narrow ſtrait leading *northward* into a long arm of the ſea, upon the *north-weſt* part of which Yedo the metropolis ſtands. At landing I ſhewed the cuſtom-houſe officers my letter from the King of Luggnagg, to his Imperial Majeſty. They knew the ſeal perfectly well; it was as broad as the palm of my hand. The impreſſion was *A king lifting up a lame beggar from the earth.* The magiſtrates of the

own, hearing of my letter, received me as a
c miniſter; they provided me with carriages
ſervants, and bore my charges to Yedo,
e I was admitted to an audience, and deli-
l my letter, which was opened with great
mony, and explained to the Emperor by an
preter; who then gave me notice, by his
ſty's order, that I ſhould ſignify my requeſt;
whatever it were, it ſhould be granted for the
of his royal brother of Luggnagg. This in-
eter was a perſon employed to tranſact af-
with the Hollanders; he ſoon conjectured
y countenance, that I was an European, and
fore repeated his Majeſty's commands in
Dutch, which he ſpoke perfectly well. I
ered (as I had before determined) that I was
tch merchant ſhipwrecked in a very remote
try, from whence I had travelled by ſea and
to Luggnagg, and then took ſhipping for
a, where I knew my countrymen often trad-
nd with ſome of theſe I hoped to get an op-
nity of returning into Europe; I therefore
humbly entreated his royal favour, to give
that I ſhould be conducted in ſafety to
ſac: To this I added another petition, that
e ſake of my patron the King of Luggnagg,
ajeſty would condeſcend to excuſe my per-
ing the ceremony impoſed on my country-
of *trampling upon the crucifix;* becauſe I had
thrown into his kingdom by my misfor-
, without any intention of trading. When

this latter petition was interpreted to the Emperor, he ſeemed a little ſurpriſed; and ſaid, he believed I was the firſt of my countrymen, who ever made any ſcruple in this point; and that he began to doubt, whether I was a real Hollander, or no; but rather ſuſpected I muſt be a Chriſtian. However, for the reaſons I had offered, but chiefly to gratify the King of Luggnagg by an uncommon mark of his favour, he would comply with the *ſingularity* of my humour; but the affair muſt be managed with dexterity, and his officers ſhould be commanded to let me paſs as it were by forgetfulneſs. For he aſſured me, that if the ſecret ſhould be diſcovered by my countrymen the Dutch, they would cut my throat in the voyage. I returned my thanks by the interpreter for ſo unuſual a favour; and ſome troops being at that time on their march to Nangaſac, the commanding officer had orders to convey me ſafe thither, with particular inſtructions about the buſineſs of the *crucifix*.

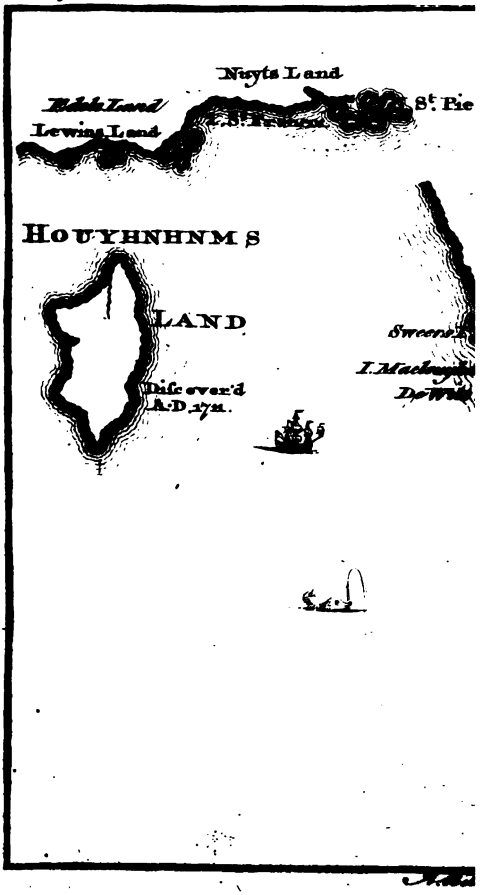
On the 9th day of June 1709, I arrived at Nangaſac, after a very long and troubleſome journey. I ſoon fell into company of ſome Dutch ſailors belonging to the Amboyna of Amſterdam, a ſtout ſhip of 450 tuns. I had lived long in Holland, purſuing my ſtudies at Leyden, and I ſpoke Dutch well. The ſeamen ſoon knew from whence I came laſt; they were curious to enquire into my voyages, and courſe of life. I made up a ſtory as ſhort and probable as I could, but concealed

cealed the greateſt part. I knew many perſons in Holland; I was able to invent names for my parents, whom I pretended to be obſcure people in the province of Gelderland. I would have given the captain (one Theodorus Vangrult) what he pleaſed to aſk for my voyage to Holland; but underſtanding I was a ſurgeon, he was contented to take half the uſual rate, on condition that I would ſerve him in the way of my calling. Before we took ſhipping, I was often aſked by ſome of the crew, whether I had performed the ceremony above mentioned? I evaded the queſtion by general anſwers, that I had ſatisfied the Emperor and court in all particulars. However a malicious rogue of a ſkipper went to an officer, and, pointing to me, told him, I had not yet *trampled on the crucifix*: But the other, who had received inſtructions to let me paſs, gave the raſcal twenty ſtrokes on the ſhoulders with a bamboo; after which I was no more troubled with ſuch queſtions.

Nothing happened worth mentioning in this voyage. We ſailed with a fair wind to the Cape of Good Hope, where we ſtaid only to take in freſh water. On the 10th of April 1710, we arrived ſafe at Amſterdam, having loſt only three men by ſickneſs in the voyage, and a fourth who fell from the fore-maſt into the ſea, not far from the coaſt of Guinea. From Amſterdam I ſoon after ſet ſail for England, in a ſmall veſſel belonging to that city.

On the 16th of April, we put in at the Downs. I landed next morning, and ſaw once more my native country, after an abſence of five years and ſix months complete. I went ſtraight to Redriff, where I arrived the ſame day at two in the afternoon, and found my wife and family in good health.

PART


Nuyts Land
Lewins Land
HOUYHNHNMS
LAND
Discover'd
A.D. 1711.

PART IV.

A VOYAGE to the COUNTRY of the HOUYHNHNMS *.

CHAP. I.

The author ſets out as captain of a ſhip. His men conſpire againſt him, confine him a long time to his cabbin. Set him on ſhore in an unknown land. He travels up into the country. The Yahoos, *a ſtrange ſort of animal, deſcribed. The author meets two* Houyhnhnms.

I Continued at home with my wife and children about five months in a very happy condition, if I could have learned the leſſon of knowing

* In this laſt part of his imaginary travels, Swift has indulged a miſanthropy that is intolerable. The repreſentation which he has given us of human nature, muſt terrify, and even diſtreſs the mind of the reader who views it. His ſallies of wit and humour loſe all their force, nothing remaining but a melancholy and diſagreeable impreſſion: We are diſguſted, not entertained; we are ſhocked, not inſtructed by the fable. I ſhould therefore chuſe to take no notice of his YAHOOS, did I not think it neceſſary to aſſert the vindication of human nature, and thereby, in ſome meaſure, to pay my duty to the great author of our ſpecies,

ing when I was well. I left my poor wife big with child, and accepted an advantageous offer made me to be captain of the Adventure, a ſtout merchant-

ſpecies, who has created us in a very fearful, and a very wonderful manner.

We are compoſed of a mind, and of a body, intimately united, and mutually affecting each other. Their operations indeed are entirely different. Whether the immortal ſpirit, that enlivens this fine machine, is originally of a ſuperior nature in various bodies, (which, I own, ſeems moſt conſiſtent, and agreeable to the ſcale and order of beings) or whether the difference depends on a ſymmetry, or peculiar ſtructure of the organs combined with it, is beyond my reach to determine. It is evidently certain, that the body is curiouſly formed with proper organs to delight, and ſuch as are adapted to all the neceſſary uſes of life. The ſpirit animates the whole; it guides the natural appetites, and confines them within juſt limits. But the natural force of this ſpirit is often immerſed in matter; and the mind becomes ſubſervient to paſſions, which it ought to govern and direct. Horace, although of the Epicurean doctrine, acknowledges this truth, where he ſays,

Atque affigit humo divinæ particulam auræ.

It is no leſs evident, that this immortal ſpirit has an independent power of acting, and, when cultivated in a proper manner, ſeemingly quits the corporeal frame within which it is impriſoned, and ſoars into higher and more ſpacious regions; where, with an energy which I had almoſt ſaid was divine, it ranges among thoſe heavenly bodies, that, in this lower world, are ſcarce viſible to our eyes; and we can at once explain the diſtance, magnitude, and velocity of the planets, and can foretell, even to a degree of minuteneſs, the particular time when a comet will return, and when the ſun will be eclipſed in the next century. Theſe powers certainly evince the dignity of human nature, and the ſurpriſing effects of the immaterial ſpirit within us; which, in ſo confined a ſtate, can thus diſengage itſelf from the fetters of matter. It is from this pre-eminence of the

merchant-man of 350 tuns: For I underſtood navigation well; and being grown weary of a ſurgeon's employment at ſea, which however I could exerciſe

the ſoul over the body, that we are enabled to view the exact order and curious variety of different beings; to conſider and cultivate the natural productions of the earth; and to admire and imitate the wiſe benevolence which reigns throughout the whole ſyſtem of the univerſe. It is from hence, that we form moral laws for our conduct. From hence we delight in copying that great original, who in his eſſence is utterly incomprehenſible, but in his influence is powerfully apparent to every degree of his creation. From hence too we perceive a real beauty in virtue, and a diſtinction between good and evil. Virtue acts with the utmoſt generoſity, and with no view to her own advantage; while vice, like a glutton, feeds herſelf enormouſly, and then is willing to diſgorge the nauſeous offals of her feaſt. But I ſhall wander too far, eſpecially as I flatter myſelf, that your mind is ſo good, and ſo unprejudiced, that you will more eaſily feel than I can illuſtrate the truth of theſe aſſertions.

Swift deduces his obſervations from wrong principles: For, in his land of Houyhnhnms, he conſiders the ſoul and body in their moſt degenerate and uncultivated ſtate; the former as a ſlave to the appetites of the latter. He ſeems inſenſible of the ſurpriſing mechaniſm and beauty of every part of the human compoſition. He forgets the fine deſcription which Ovid gives of mankind:

Os homini ſublime dedit, cœlumque tueri
Juſſit, et erectos ad ſidera tollere vultus.

In painting YAHOOS, he becomes one himſelf. Nor is the picture which he draws of the Houyhnhnms, inviting or amuſing. It wants both light and ſhade to adorn it. It is cold and inſipid. We there view the pure inſtincts of brutes, unaſſiſted by any knowledge of letters, acting within their own narrow ſphere, merely for their immediate preſervation. They are incapable of doing wrong, therefore they act right. It is ſurely a very low character given to creatures, in whom the author would inſinu-

ate

exerciſe upon occaſion, I took a ſkilful young man of that calling, one Robert Purefoy, into my ſhip. We ſet ſail from Portſmouth upon the 7th

ate ſome degree of reaſon, that they act inoffenſively, when they have neither the motive nor the power to act otherwiſe. Their virtuous qualities are only negatives. Swift himſelf, amidſt all his irony, muſt have confeſſed, that to moderate our paſſions, to extend our munificence to others, to enlarge our underſtanding, and to raiſe our idea of the Almighty by contemplating his works, is not only the buſineſs, but often the practice, and the ſtudy of the human mind. It is too certain, that no one individual has ever poſſeſſed every qualification and excellence. However, ſuch an aſſemblage of different virtues may ſtill be collected from different perſons, as are ſufficient to place the dignity of human nature in an amiable and exalted ſtation. We muſt lament indeed the many inſtances of thoſe who degenerate or go aſtray from the end and intention of their being. The true ſource of this depravity is often owing to the want of education, to the falſe indulgence of parents, or to ſome other bad cauſes, which are conſtantly prevalent in every nation. Many of theſe errors are finely ridiculed in the foregoing parts of this romance: But the voyage to the Houyhnhnms is a real inſult upon mankind.

I am heartily tired of this laſt part of Gulliver's travels; and am glad, that, having exhauſted all my obſervations on this diſagreeable ſubject, I may finiſh my letter; eſpecially as the concluſion of it naturally turns my thoughts from YAHOOS, to one of the deareſt pledges I have upon earth, yourſelf, *&c. Orrery.*

Some others, beſide Lord Orrery, have thought proper to cenſure Gulliver's voyage to the Houyhnhnms. But whether indeed their animadverſions proceeded from the infirmity of their judgment, or from ſome *Yahoo* depravity in their own nature, I ſhall not vouchſafe to inquire; as the daily occurrences of this wretched world prove, illuſtrate, and confirm all the ſarcaſms of the Doctor. Shall we praiſe that excellent moraliſt, the humorous Hogarth, for expoſing midnight revels, debaucheries, and a thouſand other vices and follies of human-kind, in

a

7th day of September 1710; on the 14th, we met with Captain Pocock of Briſtol at Teneriff, who was going to the bay of Campeachy to cut logwood.

a ſeries of hieroglyphics, ſuited to the improvement and correction of the wild, the gay, the frolic, and the extravagant? And ſhall we condemn a preacher of righteouſneſs, for expoſing, under the character of a naſty unteachable *Yahoo*, the deformity, the blackneſs, the filthineſs, and corruption of thoſe helliſh, abominable vices, which inflame the wrath of God againſt the children of diſobedience; and ſubject them without repentance, that is, without a thorough change of life and practice, to everlaſting perdition? Ought a preacher of righteouſneſs, ought a watchman of the Chriſtian faith, (who is accountable for his talents, and obliged to warn the innocent, as well as terrify the wicked and the profane), to hold his peace, like a dumb dog that cannot bark, when avarice, fraud, cheating, violence, rapine, extortion, cruelty, oppreſſion, tyranny, rancour, envy, malice, detraction, hatred, revenge, murder, whoredom, adultery, laſciviouſneſs. bribery, corruption, pimping, lying, perjury, ſubornation, treachery, ingratitude, gaming, flattery, drunkenneſs, gluttony, luxury, vanity, effeminacy, cowardice, pride, impudence, hypocriſy, blaſphemy, idolatry, ſodomy, and innumerable other vices, are as epidemical as the pox, and many of them the notorious characteriſtics of the bulk of human-kind? I would aſk theſe mighty ſofteners, theſe kind pretenders to benevolence, theſe hollow charity-mongers, what is their real opinion of that *old ſerpent*, which, like a roaring lion, traverſeth the globe, ſeeking whom he may devour? Was he not created by the Almighty, pure, faultleſs, intelligent? But is there now, throughout the whole ſyſtem of created exiſtences, any *beaſt*, any *Yahoo*, and *tyrant*, ſo vile, ſo baſe, ſo corrupted? And whence originally proceeded the change? Was it not from the abuſe of that freedom, without which no created *intelligence* can be reputed faithful, wiſe, brave, or virtuous in the eyes of his Creator? And ſurely. if this once great, once glorious ſpirit, hath been reduced for many thouſands of ages, for aught we know to the contrary, below all the ſeveral gradations of created beings, whether

logwood. On the 16th, he was parted from us by a ſtorm; I heard ſince my return, that his ſhip foundered, and none eſcaped but one cabin-boy. He was an honeſt man, and a good ſailor, but a little too poſitive in his own opinions, which was the cauſe of his deſtruction, as it hath been of ſeveral others. For if he had followed my advice, he might have been ſafe at home

whether intelligent, animal, or inſenſible; and expoſed to the fury of that avenging though merciful God, who is the fountain of all wiſdom, goodneſs, and virtue; are we not to conclude, by an exact parity of reaſon, that every moral agent is equally accountable to God for that degree of intelligence and perfection, which determine the nature of his exiſtence? And upon this very principle, which cannot be denied without running into the laſt of abſurdities, and which in fact is the reaſoning of St Peter throughout his whole 2d chapter of his 2d epiſtle, that creature man, that glorious creature man, is deſervedly more contemptible than a brute beaſt, when he flies in the face of his Creator, by enliſting under the banner of the enemy; and perverts that reaſon which was deſigned to have been the glory of his nature, even the directing ſpirit of his life and demeanour, to the vileſt, the moſt execrable, the moſt helliſh purpoſes. And this manifeſtly appears to be the ground-work of the whole ſatire contained in the voyage to the Houyhnhnms. [Then the author inſerts ſeveral paſſages from the Holy Scriptures, and the Apocrypha, which he ſays will fully juſtify all the ſarcaſms of the Doctor. But theſe we omit, as improper in a political romance.]

And to conclude: If the brutality and filthineſs of the *Yahoos* be repreſented by the ſatiric genius of Dr Swift, in colours the moſt ſhocking and deteſtable, as they certainly are, and as in fact they ought to have been, the picture is the more ſtriking, as well as the more terrible; and upon that account, more likely to inforce the obligation of religion and virtue upon the ſouls of men. *Swift.*

home with his family at this time, as well as myſelf.

I had ſeveral men died in my ſhip of calentures, ſo that I was forced to get recruits out of Barbadoes and the Leeward Iſlands, where I touched by the direction of the merchants who employed me; which I had ſoon too much cauſe to repent; for I found afterwards, that moſt of them had been Bucaneers *. I had fifty hands on board; and my orders were, that I ſhould trade with the Indians in the South-ſea, and make what diſcoveries I could. Theſe rogues, whom I had picked up, debauched my other men, and they all formed a conſpiracy to ſeize the ſhip, and ſecure me; which they did one morning, ruſhing into my cabbin, and binding me hand and foot, threatening to throw me over-board if I offered to ſtir. I told them, I was their priſoner, and would ſubmit. This they made me ſwear to do, and then they unbound me, only faſtening one of my legs with a chain near my bed, and placed a centry at my door with his piece charged, who was commanded to ſhoot me dead if I attempted my liberty. They ſent me down victuals and drink, and took the government of the ſhip to themſelves. Their deſign was to turn pirates, and plunder the Spaniards, which they could not do till they got more men. But firſt they reſolved to ſell the goods in the ſhip, and then to go to Madagaſcar for recruits, ſeveral among them

* Certain pirates, that infeſted the Weſt-Indies, were ſo called. *Hawkeſ.*

them having died ſince my confinement. They ſailed many weeks, and traded with the Indians; but I knew not what courſe they took, being kept a cloſe priſoner in my cabbin, and expecting nothing leſs than to be murdered, as they often threatened me.

Upon the 9th day of May 1711, one James Welch came down to my cabbin, and ſaid he had orders from the captain to ſet me a-ſhore. I expoſtulated with him, but in vain; neither would he ſo much as tell me, who their new captain was. They forced me into the long-boat, letting me put on my beſt ſuit of cloaths, which were as good as new, and take a ſmall bundle of linen, but no arms except my hanger; and they were ſo civil as not to ſearch my pockets, into which I conveyed what money I had, with ſome other little neceſſaries. They rowed me about a league; and then ſet me down on a ſtrand. I deſired them to tell me, what country it was. They all ſwore they knew no more than myſelf; but ſaid, that the captain (as they called him) was reſolved, after they had ſold the lading, to get rid of me in the firſt place where they could diſcover land. They puſhed off immediately, adviſing me to make haſte for fear of being overtaken by the tide, and ſo bade me farewell.

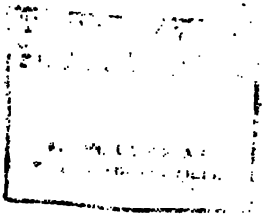
In this deſolate condition I advanced forward, and ſoon got upon firm ground, where I ſat down on a bank to reſt myſelf, and conſider what I had beſt to do. When I was a little refreſhed, I went up into the country, reſolving

to

to deliver myſelf to the firſt ſavages I ſhould meet, and purchaſe my life from them by ſome bracelets, glaſs rings, and other toys, which ſailors uſually provide themſelves with in thoſe voyages, and whereof I had ſome about me. The land was divided by long rows of trees, not regularly planted, but naturally growing; there was great plenty of graſs, and ſeveral fields of oats. I walked very circumſpectly for fear of being ſurpriſed, or ſuddenly ſhot with an arrow from behind, or on either ſide. I fell into a beaten road, where I ſaw many tracks of human feet, and ſome of cows, but moſt of horſes. At laſt I beheld ſeveral animals in a field, and one or two of the ſame kind ſitting in trees. Their ſhape was very ſingular and deformed, which a little diſcompoſed me, ſo that I lay down behind a thicket to obſerve them better. Some of them coming forward near the place where I lay, gave me an opportunity of diſtinctly marking their form. Their heads and breaſts were covered with a thick hair, ſome frizled, and others lank; they had beards like goats, and a long ridge of hair down their backs, and the fore-parts of their legs and feet; but the reſt of their bodies were bare, ſo that I might ſee their ſkins, which were of a brown buff colour. They had no tails, nor any hair at all on their buttocks, except about the *anus*; which I preſume, nature had placed there to defend them, as they ſat on the ground; for this poſture they uſed, as well as lying down, and often ſtood on their hind feet.

They climbed high trees as nimbly as a ſquirril, for they had ſtrong extended claws before and behind, terminating in ſharp points, and hooked. They would often ſpring, and bound, and leap with prodigious agility. The females were not ſo large as the males; they had long lank hair on their heads, but none on their faces, nor any thing more than a ſort of down on the reſt of their bodies, except about the *anus* and *pudenda*. Their dugs hung between their fore-feet, and often reached almoſt to the ground as they walked. The hair of both ſexes was of ſeveral colours, brown, red, black and yellow. Upon the whole, I never beheld, in all my travels, ſo diſagreeable an animal, or one againſt which I naturally conceived ſo ſtrong an antipathy. So that thinking I had ſeen enough, full of contempt and averſion, I got up, and purſued the beaten road, hoping it might direct me to the cabbin of ſome Indian. I had not got far, when I met one of theſe creatures full in my way, and coming up directly to me. The ugly monſter, when he ſaw me, diſtorted ſeveral ways every feature of his viſage, and ſtared as at an object he had never ſeen before; then approaching nearer, lifted up his fore-paw, whether out of curioſity or miſchief, I could not tell: But I drew my hanger, and gave him a good blow with the flat ſide of it; for I durſt not ſtrike with the edge, fearing the inhabitants might be provoked againſt me, if they ſhould come to know that I had killed or maimed any of their cattle. When the beaſt felt the ſmart,

A. Bell Sculpt.



ſmart, he drew back, and roared ſo loud, that a herd of at leaſt forty came flocking about me from the next field, howling, and making odious faces; but I ran to the body of a tree, and leaning my back againſt it, kept them off by waving my hanger. Several of this curſed brood getting hold of the branches behind, leapt up into the tree, from whence they began to diſcharge their excrements on my head: However, I eſcaped pretty well, by ſticking cloſe to the ſtem of the tree; but was almoſt ſtifled with the filth, which fell about me on every ſide.

In the midſt of this diſtreſs, I obſerved them all to run away on a ſudden as faſt as they could; at which I ventured to leave the tree, and purſue the road, wondering what it was that could put them into this fright. But looking on my left hand, I ſaw a horſe walking ſoftly in the field; which my perſecutors having ſooner diſcovered, was the cauſe of their flight. The horſe ſtarted a little when he came near me; but ſoon recovering himſelf, looked full in my face, with manifeſt tokens of wonder: He viewed my hands and feet, walking round me ſeveral times. I would have purſued my journey, but he placed himſelf directly in the way, yet looking with a very mild aſpect, never offering the leaſt violence. We ſtood gazing at each other for ſome time; at laſt I took the boldneſs to reach my hand towards his neck, with a deſign to ſtroak it, uſing the common ſtyle and whiſtle of jockies, when they are going to handle a ſtrange horſe. But this ani-

mal ſeemed to receive my civilities with diſdain, ſhook his head, and bent his brows, ſoftly raiſing up his right fore-foot, to remove my hand. Then he neighed three or four times, but in ſo different a cadence, that I almoſt began to think he was ſpeaking to himſelf in ſome language of his own.

While he and I were thus employed, another horſe came up; who applying himſelf to the firſt in a very formal manner, they gently ſtruck each other's right hoof before, neighing ſeveral times by turns, and varying the ſound, which ſeemed to be almoſt articulate. They went ſome paces off, as if it were to confer together, walking ſide by ſide, backward and forward, like perſons deliberating upon ſome affair of weight, but often turning their eyes towards me, as it were to watch that I might not eſcape. I was amazed to ſee ſuch actions and behaviour in brute beaſts; and concluded with myſelf, that if the inhabitants of this country were endued with a proportionable degree of reaſon, they muſt needs be the wiſeſt people upon earth. This thought gave me ſo much comfort, that I reſolved to go forward, untill I could diſcover ſome houſe or village, or meet with any of the natives, leaving the two horſes to diſcourſe together as they pleaſed. But the firſt, who was a dapple grey, obſerving me to ſteal off, neighed after me in ſo expreſſive a tone, that I fancied myſelf to underſtand what he meant; whereupon I turned back, and came near him to expect his farther commands,

mands, but concealing my fear as much as I could; for I began to be in ſome pain, how this adventure might terminate; and the reader will eaſily believe, I did not much like my preſent ſituation.

The two horſes came up cloſe to me, looking with great earneſtneſs upon my face and hands. The grey ſteed rubbed my hat all round with his right fore-hoof, and diſcompoſed it ſo much, that I was forced to adjuſt it better, by taking it off, and ſettling it again; whereat both he and his companion (who was a brown bay) appeared to be much ſurpriſed; the latter felt the lappet of my coat, and finding it to hang looſe about me, they both looked with new ſigns of wonder. He ſtroaked my right hand, ſeeming to admire the ſoftneſs and colour; but he ſqueezed it ſo hard between his hoof and his paſtern, that I was forced to roar; after which they both touched me with all poſſible tenderneſs. They were under great perplexity about my ſhoes and ſtockings, which they felt very often, neighing to each other, and uſing various geſtures not unlike thoſe of a philoſopher, when he would attempt to ſolve ſome new and difficult phænomenon.

Upon the whole, the behaviour of theſe animals was ſo orderly and rational, ſo acute and judicious, that I at laſt concluded they muſt needs be magicians, who had thus metamorphoſed themſelves upon ſome deſign, and ſeeing a ſtranger in the way, reſolved to divert themſelves with him; or perhaps were really amazed at the

ſight

can underſtand any language; therefore
bold to let your worſhips know, that
poor diſtreſſed Engliſhman, driven by his
tunes upon your coaſt; and I entreat one
to let me ride upon his back, as if he we
horſe, to ſome houſe or village, where I
relieved. In return of which favour, I w
you a preſent of this knife and bracelet
them out of my pocket.) The two c
ſtood ſilent while I ſpoke, ſeeming to liſt
great attention; and when I had ende
neighed frequently towards each other, a
were engaged in ſerious converſation. I
obſerved, that their language expreſſed
ſions very well, and the words might wi
pains be reſolved into an alphabet mor
than the Chineſe.

I could frequently diſtinguiſh the wor
which was repeated by each of them
times: And although it was impoſſible fo

hey were both viſibly ſurpriſed; and the grey re-eated the ſame word twice, as if he meant to each me the right accent, wherein I ſpoke after im as well as I could, and found myſelf perceiv-bly to improve every time, though very far from ny degree of perfection. Then the bay tried me ith a ſecond word, much harder to be pronoun-ed: But reducing it to the Engliſh orthography, ay be ſpelt thus, Houyhnhnm. I did not ſuc-eed in this ſo well as the former; but after two r three farther trials, I had better fortune; and ey both appeared amazed at my capacity.

After ſome farther diſcourſe, which I then onjectured might relate to me, the two friends ook their leaves with the ſame compliment of riking each other's hoof; and the grey made e ſigns that I ſhould walk before him; where-I thought it prudent to comply, till I could nd a better director. When I offered to flac-en my pace, he would cry *hhuun, hhuun*; I gueſ-d his meaning, and gave him to underſtand, ; well as I could, that I was weary, and not ble to walk faſter; upon which he would ſtand -while, to let me reſt.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The author conducted by a Houyhnhnm *to his houſe. The houſe deſcribed. The author's reception. The food of the* Houyhnhnms. *The author in diſtreſs for want of meat, is at laſt relieved. His manner of feeding in this country.*

HAVING travelled about three miles, we came to a long kind of building, made of timber ſtuck in the ground, and wattled a-croſs: The roof was low, and covered with ſtraw. I now began to be a little comforted: And took out ſome toys, which travellers uſually carry for preſents to the ſavage Indians of America and other parts, in hopes the people of the houſe would be thereby encouraged to receive me kindly. The horſe made me a ſign to go in firſt; it was a large room with a ſmooth clay floor, and a rack and manger, extending the whole length on one ſide. There were three nags and two mares not eating, but ſome of them ſitting down upon their hams, which I very much wondered at; but wondered more to ſee the reſt employed in domeſtic buſineſs; theſe ſeemed but ordinary cattle: However this confirmed my firſt opinion, that a people, who could ſo far civilize brute animals, muſt needs excell in wiſdom all the nations of the world. The grey came in juſt after, and thereby prevented

ed any ill treatment which the others might have given me. He neighed to them ſeveral times in a ſtyle of authority, and received anſwers.

Beyond this room there were three others reaching the length of the houſe, to which you paſſed through three doors oppoſite to each other, in the manner of a viſta. We went through the ſecond room towards the third; here the grey walked in firſt, beckoning me to attend: I waited in the ſecond room, and got ready my preſents for the maſter and miſtreſs of the houſe: They were two knives, three bracelets of falſe pearl; a ſmall looking-glaſs, and a bead necklace. The horſe neighed three or four times, and I waited to hear ſome anſwers in a human voice; but I heard no other returns, than in the ſame dialect, only one or two a little ſhriller than his. I began to think, that this houſe muſt belong to ſome perſon of great note among them, becauſe there appeared ſo much ceremony before I could gain admittance. But, that a man of quality ſhould be ſerved all by horſes, was beyond my comprehenſion. I feared my brain was diſturbed by my ſufferings and misfortunes: I rouſed myſelf, and looked about me in the room, where I was left alone; this was furniſhed like the firſt, only after a more elegant manner. I rubbed my eyes often, but the ſame objects ſtill occurred. I pinched my arms and ſides to awake myſelf, hoping I might be in a dream. I then abſolutely concluded, that all theſe appearances could

could be nothing elſe but necromancy and magic. But I had no time to purſue theſe reflections; for the grey horſe came to the door, and made me a ſign to follow him into the third room; where I ſaw a very comely mare, together with a colt and foal, ſitting on their haunches upon matts of ſtraw, not unartfully made, and perfectly neat and clean.

The mare, ſoon after my entrance, roſe from her matt, and coming up cloſe, after having nicely obſerved my hands and face, gave me a moſt contemptuous look; then turning to the horſe, I heard the word *Yahoo* often repeated betwixt them; the meaning of which word I could not then comprehend, although it were the firſt I had learned to pronounce; but I was ſoon better informed, to my everlaſting mortification; for the horſe beckoning to me with his head, and repeating the word *hhuun, hhuun*, as he did upon the road, which I underſtood was to attend him, led me out into a kind of court, where was another building at ſome diſtance from the houſe. Here we entered, and I ſaw three of theſe deteſtable creatures which I firſt met after my landing, feeding upon roots and the fleſh of ſome animals, which I afterwards found to be that of aſſes and dogs, and now and then a cow, dead by accident or diſeaſe. They were all tyed by the neck with ſtrong wyths faſtened to a beam; they held their food between the claws of their fore-feet, and tore it with their teeth.

The

The maſter horſe ordered a ſorrel nag, one of his ſervants, to untie the largeſt of theſe animals, and take him into the yard. The beaſt and I were brought cloſe together; and our countenances diligently compared both by maſter and ſervant, who thereupon repeated ſeveral times the word *Yahoo*. My horror and aſtoniſhment are not to be deſcribed, when I obſerved in this abominable animal, a perfect human figure: The face of it indeed was flat and broad, the noſe depreſſed, the lips large, and the mouth wide; But theſe differences are common to all ſavage nations, where the lineaments of the countenance are diſtorted, by the natives ſuffering their infants to lie grovelling on the earth, or by carrying them on their backs nuzling with their faces againſt the mother's ſhoulders. The fore-feet of the *Yahoo* differed from my hands, in nothing elſe but the length of the nails, the coarſeneſs and brownneſs of the palms, and the hairineſs on the backs. There was the ſame reſemblance between our feet, with the ſame differences, which I knew very well, though the horſes did not becauſe of my ſhoes and ſtockings; the ſame in every part of our bodies, except as to hairineſs and colour, which I have already deſcribed.

The great difficulty that ſeemed to ſtick with the two horſes, was, to ſee the reſt of my body ſo very different from that of the *Yahoos*, for which I was obliged to my cloaths, whereof they had no conception. The ſorrel nag offered me a root which he held (after their manner, as we

ſhall deſcribe in its proper place) between his hoof and paſtern; I took it in my hand, and having ſmelt it, returned it to him again as civilly as I could. He brought out of the *Yahoo's* kennel, a piece of aſs's fleſh; but it ſmelt ſo offenſively, that I turned from it with loathing: He then threw it to the *Yahoo*, by whom it was greedily devoured *. He afterwards ſhewed me a wiſp of hay, and a fetlock full of oats; but I ſhook my head, to ſignify that neither of theſe were food for me. And indeed I now apprehended, that I muſt abſolutely ſtarve, if I did not get to ſome of my own ſpecies; for as to thoſe filthy *Yahoos*, although there were few greater lovers of mankind at that time than myſelf; yet, I confeſs, I never ſaw any ſenſitive being ſo deteſtable on all accounts; and the more I came near them, the more hateful they grew, while I ſtaid in that country. This the maſter horſe obſerved by my behaviour, and therefore ſent the *Yahoo* back to his kennel. He then put his fore-hoof to his mouth, at which I was much ſurpriſed, although he did it with eaſe, and with a motion that appeared perfectly natural; and made other ſigns to know what I would eat; but I could not return him ſuch an anſwer as he was able to apprehend; and if he had underſtood me, I did not ſee

* Whoever is diſguſted with this picture of a *Yahoo*, would do well to reflect, that it becomes his own in exact proportion as he deviates from virtue, for virtue is the perfection of reaſon. The appetites of thoſe abandoned to vice, are not leſs brutal and ſordid, than that of a *Yahoo* for aſſes fleſh; nor is their life a ſtate of leſs abject ſervility. *Hawkeſ.*

ſee how it was poſſible to contrive any way for finding myſelf nouriſhment. While we were thus engaged, I obſerved a cow paſſing by; whereupon I pointed to her, and expreſſed a deſire to go and milk her. This had its effect; for he led me back into the houſe, and ordered a mare ſervant to open a room, where a good ſtore of milk lay in earthen and wooden veſſels, after a very orderly and cleanly manner. She gave me a large bowl-full, of which I drank very heartily, and found myſelf well refreſhed.

About noon I ſaw coming towards the houſe, a kind of vehicle drawn like a ſledge by four *Yahoos*. There was in it an old ſteed, who ſeemed to be of quality; he alighted with his hind-feet forward, having by accident got a hurt in his left fore-foot. He came to dine with our horſe, who received him with great civility. They dined in the beſt room, and had oats boiled in milk for the ſecond courſe, which the old horſe eat warm, but the reſt cold. Their mangers were placed circular in the middle of the room, and divided into ſeveral partitions, round which they ſat on their haunches upon boſſes of ſtraw. In the middle was a large rack, with angles anſwering to every partition of the manger. So that each horſe and mare eat their own hay, and their own maſh of oats and milk, with much decency and regularity. The behaviour of the young colt and foal appeared very modeſt; and that of the maſter and miſtreſs extremely chearful and complaiſant to their gueſt. The grey

ordered me to ſtand by him; and much diſcourſe paſſed between him and his friend concerning me, as I found by the ſtranger's often looking on me, and the frequent repetition of the word *Yahoo*.

I happened to wear my gloves, which the maſter-grey obſerving, ſeemed perplexed, diſcovering ſigns of wonder what I had done to my fore-feet; he put his hoof three or four times to them, as if he would ſignify, that I ſhould reduce them to their former ſhape, which I preſently did, pulling off both my gloves, and putting them into my pocket. This occaſioned farther talk, and I ſaw the company was pleaſed with my behaviour, whereof I ſoon found the good effects. I was ordered to ſpeak the few words I underſtood; and while they were at dinner, the maſter taught me the names for oats, milk, fire, water, and ſome others; which I could readily pronounce after him, having from my youth a great facility in learning languages.

When dinner was done, the maſter-horſe took me aſide, and by ſigns and words made me underſtand the concern he was in, that I had nothing to eat. Oats in their tongue are called *hlunnh*. This word I pronounced two or three times; for although I had refuſed them at firſt, yet upon ſecond thoughts I conſidered, that I could contrive to make of them a kind of bread, which might be ſufficient with milk to keep me alive, till I could make my eſcape to ſome other country, and to creatures of my own ſpecies.

The

The horſe immediately ordered a white mare-ſervant of his family, to bring me a good quantity of oats in a ſort of wooden tray. Theſe I heated before the fire, as well as I could, and rubbed them till the huſks came off, which I made a ſhift to winnow from the grain; I ground and beat them between two ſtones, then took water, and made them into a paſte or cake, which I toaſted at the fire, and eat warm with milk. It was at firſt a very inſipid diet, though common enough in many parts of Europe, but grew tolerable by time; and having been often reduced to hard fare in my life, this was not the firſt experiment I had made, how eaſily nature is ſatisfied. And I cannot but obſerve, that I never had one hour's ſickneſs, while I ſtaid in this iſland. It is true, I ſometimes made a ſhift to catch a rabbit, or bird, by ſpringes made of *Yahoo's* hair; and I often gathered wholeſome herbs, which I boiled, and eat as ſalads with my bread; and now and then, for a rarity, I made a little butter, and drank the whey. I was at firſt at a great loſs for ſalt; but cuſtom ſoon reconciled me to the want of it; and I am confident, that the frequent uſe of ſalt among us is an effect of luxury, and was firſt introduced only as a provocative to drink; except where it is neceſſary for preſerving of fleſh in long voyages, or in places remote from great markets. For we obſerve no animal to be fond of it, but man; And as to myſelf, when I left this country, it

was a great while before I could endure the taſte of it in any thing that I eat.

This is enough to ſay upon the ſubject of my diet, wherewith other travellers fill their books, as if the readers were perſonally concerned whether we fare well or ill. However it was neceſſary to mention this matter, leſt the world ſhould think it impoſſible, that I could find ſuſtenance for three years in ſuch a country, and among ſuch inhabitants.

When it grew towards evening, the maſter horſe ordered a place for me to lodge in; it was but ſix yards from the houſe, and ſeparated from the ſtable of the *Yahoos*. Here I got ſome ſtraw, and covering myſelf with my own cloaths, ſlept very ſound. But I was in a ſhort time better accommodated, as the reader ſhall know hereafter, when I come to treat more particularly about my way of living.

CHAP. III.

The author ſtudious to learn the language; the Houyhnhnm, *his maſter, aſſiſts in teaching him. The language deſcribed. Several* Houyhnhnms *of quality came, out of curioſity, to ſee the author. He gives his maſter a ſhort account of his voyage.*

MY principal endeavour was to learn the language, which my maſter (for ſo I ſhall henceforth call him) and his children, and every ſervant

ſervant of his houſe, were deſirous to teach me. For they looked upon it as a prodigy, that a brute animal ſhould diſcover ſuch marks of a rational creature. I pointed to every thing, and enquired the name of it, which I wrote down in my *journal-book* when I was alone, and corrected my bad accent, by deſiring thoſe of the family to pronounce it often. In this employment a ſorrel nag, one of the under-ſervants, was very ready to aſſiſt me.

In ſpeaking, they pronounce through the noſe and throat, and their language approaches neareſt to the High-Dutch, or German, of any I know in Europe; but is much more graceful and ſignificant. The Emperor Charles V. made almoſt the ſame obſervation, when he ſaid, that if he were to ſpeak to his horſe, it ſhould be in High-Dutch.

The curioſity and impatience of my maſter were ſo great, that he ſpent many hours of his leiſure to inſtruct me. He was convinced (as he afterwards told me) that I muſt be a *Yahoo*; but my teachableneſs, civility, and cleanlineſs, aſtoniſhed him; which were qualities altogether oppoſite to thoſe animals. He was moſt perplexed about my cloaths, reaſoning ſometimes with himſelf, whether they were a part of my body; for I never pulled them off till the family were aſleep, and got them on before they waked in the morning. My maſter was eager to learn from whence I came; how I acquired thoſe appearances of reaſon, which I diſcovered in all my actions;

actions; and to know my ſtory from my own mouth, which he hoped he ſhould ſoon do by the great proficiency I made in learning and pronouncing their words and ſentences. To help my memory, I formed all I learned into the Engliſh alphabet, and writ the words down with the tranſlations. This laſt, after ſome time, I ventured to do in my maſter's preſence. It coſt me much trouble to explain to him what I was doing: For the inhabitants have not the leaſt idea of books or literature.

In about ten weeks time, I was able to underſtand moſt of his queſtions; and in three months, could give him ſome tolerable anſwers. He was extremely curious to know from what part of the country I came, and how I was taught to imitate a rational creature; becauſe the *Yahoos* (whom he ſaw I exactly reſembled in my head, hands and face, that were only viſible) with ſome appearance of cunning, and the ſtrongeſt diſpoſition to miſchief, were obſerved to be the moſt unteachable of all brutes. I anſwered, that I came over the ſea from a far place, with many others of my own kind, in a great hollow veſſel made of the bodies of trees; that my companions forced me to land on this coaſt, and then left me to ſhift for myſelf. It was with ſome difficulty, and by the help of many ſigns, that I brought him to underſtand me. He replied, that I muſt needs be miſtaken, or that I *ſaid the thing which was not* (for they have no word in their language to expreſs lying

or

or falſhood.) He knew it was impoſſible, that there could be a country beyond the ſea, or that a parcel of brutes could move a wooden veſſel whither they pleaſed upon water. He was ſure no Houyhnhnm alive could make ſuch a veſſel, nor would truſt *Yahoos* to manage it.

The word Houyhnhnm, in their tongue, ſignifies a *horſe*, and, in its etymology, the *perfection of nature*. I told my maſter, that I was at a loſs for expreſſion; but would improve as faſt as I could, and hoped in a ſhort time I ſhould be able to tell him wonders: He was pleaſed to direct his own mare, his colt, and foal, and the ſervants of the family, to take all opportunities of inſtructing me; and every day, for two or three hours, he was at the ſame pains himſelf: Several horſes and mares of quality in the neighbourhood came often to our houſe, upon the report ſpread of a wonderful *Yahoo* that could ſpeak like a Houyhnhnm, and ſeemed in his words and actions to diſcover ſome glimmerings of reaſon. Theſe delighted to converſe with me; they put many queſtions, and received ſuch anſwers as I was able to return. By all theſe advantages I made ſo great a progreſs, that in five months from my arrival, I underſtood whatever was ſpoken, and could expreſs myſelf tollerably well.

The Houyhnhnms who came to viſit my maſter, out of a deſign of ſeeing and talking with me, could hardly believe me to be a right *Yahoo*, becauſe my body had a different covering from others of my kind. They were aſtoniſhed to obſerve

when the family were gone to bed, i
cuſtom to ſtrip, and cover myſelf with m
It happened one morning early, that
ſent for me by the ſorrel nag, who was
when he came, I was faſt aſleep, my cl
len off on one ſide, and my ſhirt above
I waked at the noiſe he made, and obſ
to deliver his meſſage in ſome diſorc
which he went to my maſter, and i
fright gave him a very confuſed accoun
he had ſeen: This I preſently diſcovere
ing as ſoon as I was dreſſed to pay my
upon his Honour, he aſked me the m
what his ſervant had reported; that
the ſame thing when I ſlept, as I appe
at other times; that his valet aſſured h
part of me was white, ſome yellow, a
ſo white, and ſome brown.

I had hitherto concealed the ſecret of
in order to diſtinguiſh myſelf. as muc

my maſter, that in the country from whence I came, thoſe of my kind always covered their bodies with the hairs of certain animals prepared by art, as well for decency, as to avoid the inclemencies of air both hot and cold; of which, as to my own perſon, I would give him immediate conviction, if he pleaſed to command me; only deſiring his excuſe, if I did not expoſe thoſe parts that nature taught us to conceal. He ſaid my diſcourſe was all very ſtrange, but eſpecially the laſt part; for he could not underſtand, why nature ſhould teach us to conceal what nature had given: That neither himſelf nor family were aſhamed of any parts of their bodies; but however I might do as I pleaſed. Whereupon I firſt unbuttoned my coat, and pulled it off. I did the ſame with my waiſtcoat: I drew off my ſhoes, ſtockings, and breeches. I let my ſhirt down to my waiſt, and drew up the bottom, faſtening it like a girdle about my middle to hide my nakedneſs.

My maſter obſerved the whole performance with great ſigns of curioſity and admiration. He took up all my cloaths in his paſtern, one piece after another, and examined them diligently: He then ſtroaked my body very gently, and looked round me ſeveral times; after which he ſaid, it was plain I muſt be a perfect *Yahoo*; but that I differed very much from the reſt of my ſpecies, in the ſoftneſs, whiteneſs, and ſmoothneſs of my ſkin, my want of hair in ſeveral parts of my body, the ſhape and ſhortneſs of my claws behind

and

and before, and my affectation of walking continually on my two hinder feet. He desired to see no more; and gave me leave to put on my cloaths again, for I was shuddering with cold.

I expressed my uneasiness at his giving me so often the appellation of *Yahoo*, an odious animal, for which I had so utter an hatred and contempt: I begged he would forbear applying that word to me, and make the same order in his family, and among his friends, whom he suffered to see me. I requested likewise, that the secret of my having a false covering to my body, might be known to none but himself, at least as long as my present cloathing should last; for as to what the sorrel nag his valet had observed, his Honour might command him to conceal it.

All this my master very graciously consented to; and thus the secret was kept till my cloaths began to wear out, which I was forced to supply by several contrivances that shall hereafter be mentioned. In the mean time, he desired I would go on with my utmost diligence to learn their language, because he was more astonished at my capacity for speech and reason, that at the figure of my body, whether it were covered or no; adding, that he waited with some impatience to hear the wonders which I promised to tell him.

From thenceforward he doubled the pains he had been at to instruct me; he brought me into all company, and made them treat me with civility, because, as he told them privately, this would

put

put me in good humour, and make me more diverting.

Every day, when I waited on him, beſide the trouble he was at in teaching, he would aſk me ſeveral queſtions concerning myſelf, which I anſwered as well as I could; and by theſe means he had already received ſome general ideas, though very imperfect. It would be tedious to relate the ſeveral ſteps, by which I advanced to a more regular converſation: But the firſt account I gave of myſelf, in any order and length, was to this purpoſe:

That I came from a very far country, as I already had attempted to tell him, with about fifty more of my own ſpecies; that we travelled upon the ſeas in a great hollow veſſel made of wood, and larger than his Honour's houſe. I deſcribed the ſhip to him in the beſt terms I could, and explained, by the help of my handkerchief diſplayed, how it was driven forward by the wind. That upon a quarrel among us, I was ſet on ſhore on this coaſt, where I walked forward, without knowing whither, till he delivered me from the perſecution of thoſe execrable *Yahoos*. He aſked me, who made the ſhip, and how it was poſſible that the Houyhnhnms of my country would leave it to the management of brutes? My anſwer was, that I durſt proceed no farther in my relation, unleſs he would give me his word and honour that he would not be offended, and then I would tell him the wonders I had ſo often promiſed. He agreed; and I went on by aſſuring

him, that the ſhip was made by creatures like myſelf, who in all the countries I had travelled, as well as in my own, were the only governing, rational animals; and that upon my arrival hither, I was as much aſtoniſhed to ſee the Houyhnhnms act like rational beings, as he or his friends could be in finding ſome marks of reaſon in a creature he was pleaſed to call a *Yahoo*; to which I owned my reſemblance in every part, but could not account for their degenerate and brutal nature. I ſaid farther, that if good fortune ever reſtored me to my native country to relate my travels hither, as I reſolved to do, every body would believe, that I *ſaid the thing which was not*; that I invented the ſtory out of my own head; and (with all poſſible reſpect to himſelf, his family, and friends, and under his promiſe of not being offended) our countrymen would hardly think it probable, that a Houyhnhnm ſhould be the preſiding creature of a nation, and a *Yahoo* the brute.

CHAP. IV.

The Houyhnhnms *notion of truth and falſehood. The author's diſcourſe diſapproved by his maſter. The author gives a more particular account of himſelf, and the accidents of his voyage.*

MY maſter heard me with great appearances of uneaſineſs in his countenance; becauſe *doubting*, or *not believing*, are ſo little known in this

this country, that the inhabitants cannot tell how to behave themſelves under ſuch circumſtances. And I remember, in frequent diſcourſes with my maſter concerning the nature of manhood in other parts of the world, having occaſion to talk of *lying* and *falſe repreſentation*, it was with much difficulty that he comprehended what I meant; although he had otherwiſe a moſt acute judgment. For he argued thus: That the uſe of ſpeech was to make us underſtand one another, and to receive information of facts: Now, if any one *ſaid the thing which was not*, theſe ends were defeated; becauſe I cannot properly be ſaid to underſtand him: And I am ſo far from receiving information, that he leaves me worſe than in ignorance; for I am led to believe a thing *black* when it is *white*, and *ſhort* when it is *long*. And theſe were all the notions he had concerning that faculty of *lying*, ſo perfectly well underſtood, and ſo univerſally practiſed, among human creatures.

To return from this digreſſion; when I aſſerted that the *Yahoos* were the only governing animals in my country, which my maſter ſaid, was altogether paſt his conception, he deſired to know, whether we had Houyhnhnms among us, and what was their employment. I told him, we had great numbers; that in ſummer they grazed in the fields, and in winter were kept in houſes with hay and oats, where *Yahoo*-ſervants were employed to rub their ſkins ſmooth, comb their manes, pick their feet, ſerve them with food, and make

their beds. I underſtand you well, ſays my maſter; it is now very plain from all you have ſpoken, that, whatever ſhare of reaſon the *Yahoos* pretend to, the Houyhnhnms are your maſters; I heartily wiſh our *Yahoos* would be ſo tractable. I begged his Honour would pleaſe to excuſe me from proceeding any farther, becauſe I was very certain, that the account he expected from me would be highly diſpleaſing. But he inſiſted in commanding me to let him know the beſt and the worſt: I told him he ſhould be obeyed. I owned, that the Houyhnhnms among us, whom we called *horſes*, were the moſt generous and comely animal we had; that they excelled in ſtrength and ſwiftneſs; and when they belonged to perſons of quality, were employed in travelling, racing, or drawing chariots; they were treated with much kindneſs and care, till they fell into diſeaſes, or became foundered in the feet; but then they were ſold, and uſed to all kind of drudgery, till they died; after which their ſkins were ſtripped, and ſold for what they were worth, and their bodies left to be devoured by dogs and birds of prey. But the common race of horſes had not ſo good fortune, being kept by farmers, and carriers, and other mean people, who put them to greater labour, and fed them worſe. I deſcribed, as well as I could, our way of riding; the ſhape and uſe of a bridle, a ſaddle, a ſpur, and a whip; of harneſs and wheels. I added, that we faſtened plates of a certain hard ſubſtance, called *iron*, at the bottom of their feet, to preſerve

ſerve their hoofs from being broken by the ſtony ways, on which we often travelled.

My maſter, after ſome expreſſions of great indignation, wondered how we dared to venture upon a Houyhnhnm's back; for he was ſure, that the weakeſt ſervant in his houſe would be able to ſhake off the ſtrongeſt *Yahoo*; or by lying down, and rolling on his back, ſqueeze the brute to death. I anſwered, that our horſes were trained up from three or four years old to the ſeveral uſes we intended them for; that, if any of them proved intolerably vicious, they were employed for carriages; that they were ſeverely beaten, while they were young, for any miſchievous tricks; that the males, deſigned for the common uſe of riding or draught, were generally *caſtrated* about two years after their birth, to take down their ſpirits, and make them more tame and gentle; that they were indeed ſenſible of rewards and puniſhments; but his Honour would pleaſe to conſider, that they had not the leaſt tincture of reaſon, any more than the *Yahoos* in this country.

It put me to the pains of many circumlocutions, to give my maſter a right idea of what I ſpoke; for their language doth not abound in variety of words, becauſe their wants and paſſions are fewer than among us. But it is impoſſible to expreſs his noble reſentment at our ſavage treatment of the Houyhnhnm race; particularly, after I had explained the manner and uſe of *caſtrating* horſes among us, to hinder them from propagating their

kind, and to render them more ſervile. He ſaid, if it were poſſible there could be any country where *Yahoos* alone were endued with reaſon, they certainly muſt be the governing animal, becauſe reaſon will in time always prevail againſt brutal ſtrength. But, conſidering the frame of our bodies, and eſpecially of mine, he thought no creature of equal bulk was ſo ill contrived for employing that reaſon in the common offices of life; whereupon, he deſired to know, whether thoſe among whom I lived, reſembled me or the *Yahoos* of his country. I aſſured him, that I was as well ſhaped as moſt of my age: But the younger, and the females, were much more ſoft and tender, and the ſkins of the latter generally as white as milk. He ſaid, I differed indeed from other *Yahoos*, being much more cleanly, and not altogether ſo deformed; but in point of real advantage, he thought I differed for the worſe. That my nails were of no uſe, either to my fore or hinder-feet; as to my fore-feet, he could not properly call them by that name, for he never obſerved me to walk upon them; that they were too ſoft to bear the ground; that I generally went with them uncovered; neither was the covering I ſometimes wore on them of the ſame ſhape, or ſo ſtrong as that on my feet behind. That I could not walk with any ſecurity; for if either of my hinder-feet ſlipped, I muſt inevitably fall. He then began to find fault with other parts of my body; the flatneſs of my face, the prominence of my noſe, mine eyes placed directly in front,

ſo

ſo that I could not look on either ſide without turning my head: That I was not able to feed myſelf without lifting one of my fore-feet to my mouth; and therefore nature had placed thoſe joints to anſwer that neceſſity. He knew not what could be the uſe of thoſe ſeveral clefts and diviſions in my feet behind; that theſe were too ſoft to bear the hardneſs and ſharpneſs of ſtones, without a covering made of the ſkin of ſome other brute; that my whole body wanted a fence againſt heat and cold, which I was forced to put on and off every day with tediouſneſs and trouble. And laſtly, that he obſerved every animal in this country naturally to abhor the *Yahoos*, whom the weaker avoided, and the ſtronger drove from them. So that, ſuppoſing us to have the gift of reaſon, he could not ſee how it were poſſible to cure that natural antipathy, which every creature diſcovered againſt us; nor conſequently, how we could tame and render them ſerviceable. However, he would (as he ſaid) debate the matter no farther, becauſe he was more deſirous to know my own ſtory, the country where I was born, and the ſeveral actions and events of my life before I came hither.

I aſſured him, how extremely deſirous I was, that he ſhould be ſatisfied in every point: But I doubted much, whether it would be poſſible for me to explain myſelf on ſeveral ſubjects, whereof his Honour could have no conception; becauſe I ſaw nothing in his country, to which I could reſemble them. That however I would do my beſt,

beſt, and ſtrive to expreſs myſelf by ſimilitudes, humbly deſiring his aſſiſtance when I wanted proper words; which he was pleaſed to promiſe me.

I ſaid, my birth was of honeſt parents in an iſland called England, which was remote from this country as many days journey as the ſtrongeſt of his Honour's ſervants could travel in the annual courſe of the ſun: That I was bred a ſurgeon, whoſe trade it is to cure wounds and hurts in the body, gotten by accident or violence: That my country was governed by a female man, whom we called Queen: That I left it to get riches, whereby I might maintain myſelf and family when I ſhould return: That in my laſt voyage I was commander of the ſhip, and had about fifty *Yahoos* under me, many of which died at ſea, and I was forced to ſupply them by others picked out from ſeveral nations: That our ſhip was twice in danger of being ſunk; the firſt time, by a great ſtorm; and the ſecond, by ſtriking againſt a rock. Here my maſter interpoſed, by aſking me, how I could perſuade ſtrangers out of different countries to venture with me, after the loſſes I had ſuſtained, and the hazards I had run. I ſaid, they were fellows of deſperate fortunes, forced to fly from the places of their birth on account of their poverty or their crimes. Some were undone by ſaw-ſuits; others ſpent all they had in drinking, whoring, and gaming; others fled for treaſon; many for murder, theft, poiſoning, robbery, perjury, forgery, coining falſe

falſe money; for committing rapes or ſodomy; for flying from their colours, or deſerting to the enemy; and moſt of them had broken priſon. None of theſe durſt return to their native countries, for fear of being hanged, or of ſtarving in a jail; and therefore, they were under a neceſſity of ſeeking a livelihood in other places.

During this diſcourſe, my maſter was pleaſed to interrupt me ſeveral times. I had made uſe of many circumlocutions in deſcribing to him the nature of the ſeveral crimes, for which moſt of our crew had been forced to fly their country. This labour took up ſeveral days converſation, before he was able to comprehend me. He was wholly at a loſs to know, what could be the uſe or neceſſity of practiſing thoſe vices. To clear up which, I endeavoured to give him ſome ideas of the deſire of power and riches; of the terrible effects of luſt, intemperance, malice, and envy. All this I was forced to define and deſcribe, by putting caſes, and making ſuppoſitions. After which, like one whoſe imagination was ſtruck with ſomething never ſeen or heard of before, he would lift up his eyes with amazement and indignation. Power, government, war, law, puniſhment, and a thouſand other things, had no terms wherein that language could expreſs them; which made the difficulty almoſt inſuperable to give my maſter any conception of what I meant: But being of an excellent underſtanding, much improved by contemplation and converſe, he at laſt arrived at a competent knowledge of what human

nature

nature in our parts of the world is capable to perform; and desired I would give him some particular account of that land which we call Europe, but especially of my own country.

CHAP. V.

The author, at his master's commands, informs him of the state of England. The causes of war among the princes of Europe. The author begins to explain the English constitution.

THE reader may please to observe, that the following extract of many conversations I had with my master, contains a summary of the most material points, which were discoursed at several times for above two years; his Honour often desiring fuller satisfaction, as I farther improved in the Houyhnhnm tongue. I laid before him, as well as I could, the whole state of Europe; I discoursed of trade and manufactures, of arts and sciences; and the answers I gave to all the questions he made as they arose upon several subjects, were a fund of conversation not to be exhausted. But I shall here only set down the substance of what passed between us concerning my own country, reducing it into order as well as I can, without any regard to time or other circumstances, while I strictly adhere to truth. My only concern is, that I shall hardly be able

to do juſtice to my maſter's arguments and expreſſions, which muſt needs ſuffer by my want of capacity, as well as by a tranſlation into our barbarous Engliſh.

In obedience, therefore, to his Honour's commands, I related to him the *revolution* under the Prince of Orange; the long war with France entered into by the ſaid Prince, and renewed by his ſucceſſor the preſent Queen, wherein the greateſt powers of Chriſtendom were engaged, and which ſtill continued: I computed, at his requeſt, that about a million of *Yahoos* might have been killed in the whole progreſs of it; and perhaps a hundred or more cities taken, and five times as many ſhips burnt or ſunk.

He aſked me, what were the uſual cauſes or motives that made one country go to war with another? I anſwered they were innumerable; but I ſhould only mention a few of the chief. Sometimes the ambition of princes, who never think they have land or people enough to govern. Sometimes the corruption of miniſters, who engage their maſter in a war, in order to ſtifle or divert the clamour of the ſubjects againſt their evil adminiſtration. Difference in opinions hath coſt many millions of lives: For inſtance, whether *fleſh* be *bread*, or *bread* be *fleſh*; whether the juice of a certain *berry* be *blood* or *wine**; whether *whiſtling* be a vice or a virtue †; whether it be better to *kiſs a poſt*, or throw it into the fire ‡; what is the beſt colour for a *coat*, whether

* Tranſubſtantiation. † Church-muſic. ‡ Kiſſing a croſs.

ther *black*, *white*, *red*, or *grey*; and whether it ſhould be *long* or *ſhort*, *narrow* or *wide*, *dirty* or *clean*, with many more*. Neither are any wars ſo furious and bloody, or of ſo long continuance, as thoſe occaſioned by difference in opinion, eſpecially if it be in things indifferent.

Sometimes the quarrel between two princes is to decide, which of them ſhall diſpoſſeſs a third of his dominions, where neither of them pretend to any right. Sometimes one prince quarrelleth with another, for fear the other ſhould quarrel with him. Sometimes a war is entered upon, becauſe the enemy is too *ſtrong*; and ſometimes becauſe he is too *weak*. Sometimes our neighbours *want* the *things* which we *have*, or *have* the things which we *want*; and we both fight, till they take ours, or give us theirs. It is a very juſtifiable cauſe of a war, to invade a country after the people have been waſted by famine, deſtroyed by peſtilence, or embroiled by factions among themſelves. It is juſtifiable to enter into a war againſt our neareſt ally, when one of his towns lies convenient for us, or a territory of land that would render our dominions round and compact. If a prince ſends forces into a nation where the people are poor and ignorant, he may lawfully put half of them to death, and make ſlaves of the reſt, in order to civilize and reduce them from their barbarous way of living. It is a very kingly, honourable, and frequent practice, when one

* The colour and make of ſacred veſtments, and different orders of Popiſh eccleſiaſtics. Hawkeſ.

prince deſires the aſſiſtance of another to ſecure him againſt an invaſion, that the aſſiſtant, when he had driven out the invader, ſhould ſeize on the dominions himſelf, and kill, impriſon, or baniſh the prince he came to relieve. Alliance by blood, or marriage, is a frequent cauſe of war between princes; and the nearer the kindred is, the greater is their diſpoſition to quarrel: *Poor* nations are *hungry*, and *rich* nations are *proud*; and pride and hunger will ever be at variance. For theſe reaſons, the trade of a *ſoldier* is held the moſt honourable of all others; becauſe a *ſoldier* is a *Yahoo* hired to kill in cold blood as many of his own ſpecies, who have never offended him, as poſſibly he can.

There is likewiſe a kind of beggarly princes in Europe, not able to make war by themſelves, who hire out their troops to richer nations, for ſo much a day to each man; of which they keep three-fourths to themſelves, and it is the beſt part of their maintenance; ſuch are thoſe in many *northern* parts of Europe.

What you have told me (ſaid my maſter) upon the ſubject of war, does indeed diſcover moſt admirably the effects of that reaſon you pretend to: However it is happy that the *ſhame* is greater than the *danger*; and that nature has left you utterly incapable of doing much miſchief. For, your mouths lying flat with your faces, you can hardly bite each other to any purpoſe, unleſs by conſent. Then as to the claws upon your feet before and behind, they are ſo ſhort and

tender, that one of our *Yahoos* would drive a dozen of yours before him. And therefore, in recounting the numbers of thoſe who have been killed in battle, I cannot but think you have *ſaid the thing which is not.*

I could not forbear ſhaking my head, and ſmiling a little at his ignorance. And being no ſtranger to the art of war, I gave him a deſcription of cannons, culverins, muſquets, carabines, piſtols, bullets, powder, ſwords, bayonets, battles, ſieges, retreats, attacks, undermines, countermines, bombardments, ſea-fights, ſhips ſunk with a thouſand men, twenty thouſand killed on each ſide, dying groans, limbs flying in the air, ſmoke, noiſe, confuſion, trampling to death under horſes feet; flight, purſuit, victory; fields ſtrewed with carcaſſes, left for food to dogs and wolves, and birds of prey; plundering, ſtripping, raviſhing, burning and deſtroying. And to ſet forth the valour of my own dear countrymen, I aſſured him, that I had ſeen them blow up an hundred enemies at once in a ſiege, and as many in a ſhip; and beheld dead bodies drop down in pieces from the clouds, to the great diverſion of the ſpectators *.

I

* It would perhaps be impoſſible, by the moſt laboured argument or forcible eloquence, to ſhew the abſurd injuſtice and horrid cruelty of war ſo effectually, as by this ſimple exhibition of them in a new light. With war, including every ſpecies of iniquity, and every art of deſtruction, we become familiar by degrees, under ſpecious terms, which are ſeldom examined, becauſe they are learned at an age, in which the mind implicitly receives

I was going on to more particulars, when my maſter commanded me ſilence. He ſaid, whoever underſtood the nature of *Yahoos*, might eaſily believe it poſſible for ſo vile an animal to be capable of every action I had named, if their ſtrength and cunning equalled their malice. But as my diſcourſe had increaſed his abhorrence of the whole ſpecies, ſo he found it gave him a diſturbance in his mind, to which he was wholly a ſtranger before. He thought his ears, being uſed to ſuch abominable words, might by degrees admit them with leſs deteſtation. That although he hated the *Yahoos* of this country, yet he no more blamed them for their odious qualities, than he did a *Gnnayh* (a bird of prey) for its cruelty, or a ſharp ſtone for cutting his hoof. But when a creature, pretending to reaſon, could be capable of ſuch enormities, he dreaded, leſt the corruption of that faculty might be worſe than brutality itſelf. He ſeemed

receives and retains whatever is impreſt. Thus it happens, when one man murders another to gratify his luſt, we ſhudder; but when one man murders a million to gratify his vanity, we approve and we admire, we envy and we applaud. If, when this and the preceding pages are read, we diſcover with aſtoniſhment, that when the ſame events have occurred in hiſtory, we felt no emotion, and acquieſced in wars which we could not but know to have been commenced for ſuch cauſes, and carried on by ſuch means; let not him be cenſured for too much debaſing his ſpecies, who has contributed to their felicity and preſervation, by ſtripping off the veil of cuſtom and prejudice, and holding up, in their native deformity, the vices by which they become wretched, and the arts by which they are deſtroyed. *Hawkeſ.*

therefore confident, that inſtead of reaſon, we were only poſſeſſed of ſome quality fitted to encreaſe our natural vices; as the reflection from a troubled ſtream returns the image of an ill-ſhapen body, not only *larger*, but more *diſtorted*.

He added, that he had heard too much upon the ſubject of war, both in this, and ſome former diſcourſes. There was another point, which a little perplexed him at preſent. I had informed him, that ſome of our crew left their country on account of being ruined by *law*; that I had already explained the meaning of the word: But he was at a loſs how it ſhould come to paſs, that the *law*, which was intended for every man's preſervation, ſhould be any man's ruin. Therefore he deſired to be farther ſatisfied what I meant by *law*, and the *diſpenſers* thereof, according to the preſent practice in my own country: Becauſe he thought *nature* and *reaſon* were ſufficient guides for a reaſonable animal, as we pretended to be, in ſhewing us what we ought to do, and what to avoid.

I aſſured his Honour, that *law* was a ſcience in which I had not much converſed, further than by employing advocates in vain upon ſome injuſtices that had been done me; however I would give him all the ſatisfaction I was able.

I ſaid, there was a ſociety of men among us, bred up from their youth in the art of proving, by words multiplied for the purpoſe, that *white* is *black*, and *black* is *white*, according as they are paid.

paid *. To this ſociety all the reſt of the people are ſlaves. For example, if my neighbour hath a mind to my *cow*, he hires a *lawyer* to prove that he ought to have my *cow* from me. I muſt then hire another to defend my right, it being againſt all rules of *law*, that any man ſhould be allowed to ſpeak for himſelf. Now, in this caſe, I, who am the right owner, lie under two great diſadvantages; *firſt*, my *lawyer*, being practiſed almoſt from his cradle in defending falſhood, is quite out of his element when he would be an advocate for juſtice, which is an unnatural office, he always attempts with great aukwardneſs, if not with ill will. The *ſecond* diſadvantage is, that my *lawyer* muſt proceed with great caution, or elſe he will be reprimanded by the *judges*, and abhorred by his brethren as one that would leſſen the practice of the *law*. And therefore I have but two methods to preſerve my *cow*. The firſt is, to gain over my adverſary's *lawyer* with a double fee; who will then betray his client, by inſinuating, that he hath *juſtice* on his ſide. The ſecond way is, for my *lawyer* to make my cauſe appear as *unjuſt* as he can, by allowing the *cow* to belong to my adverſary; and this, if it be ſkilfully done, will certainly beſpeak the favour of the bench. Now, your Honour is to know, that theſe *judges* are perſons appointed to decide all controverſies of property, as well as for the

* As in every cauſe Counſel are fee'd on both ſides, it cannot be pretended that this account is much exaggerated. *Hawkeſ.*

trial of criminals, and picked out from the moſt dextrous lawyers who are grown old or lazy; and having been biaſſed all their lives againſt truth and equity, lie under ſuch a fatal neceſſity of favouring fraud, perjury, and oppreſſion, that I have known ſome of them refuſe a large bribe from the ſide where juſtice lay, rather than injure the faculty by doing any thing unbecoming their nature or their office.

It is a maxim among theſe lawyers, that whatever hath been done before, may legally be done again: And therefore, they take ſpecial care to record all the deciſions formerly made againſt common juſtice, and the general reaſon of mankind. Theſe, under the name of *precedents*, they produce as authorities to juſtify the moſt iniquitous opinions, and the judges never fail of directing accordingly.

In pleading, they ſtudiouſly avoid entering into the *merits* of the cauſe; but are loud, violent, and tedious, in dwelling upon all *circumſtances* which are not to the purpoſe. For inſtance, in the caſe already mentioned: They never deſire to know what claim or title my adverſary hath to my *cow*; but whether the ſaid *cow* were red or black; her horns long or ſhort; whether the field I graze her in be round or ſquare; whether ſhe was milked at home or abroad; what diſeaſes ſhe is ſubject to, and the like; after which they conſult *precedents*, adjourn the cauſe from time to time, and in ten, twenty, or thirty years, come to an iſſue.

It

It is likewiſe to be obſerved, that this ſociety hath a peculiar cant and jargon of their own, that no other mortal can underſtand, and wherein all their laws are written, which they take ſpecial care to multiply; whereby they have wholly confounded the very eſſence of truth and falſhood, of right and wrong; ſo that it will take thirty years to decide, whether the field left me by my anceſtors for ſix generations, belongs to me, or to a ſtranger three hundred miles off.

In the trial of perſons accuſed for crimes againſt the ſtate, the method is much more ſhort and commendable: The judge firſt ſends to ſound the diſpoſition of thoſe in power, after which he can eaſily hang or ſave a criminal, ſtrictly preſerving all due forms of *law*.

Here my maſter interpoſing, ſaid it was a pity that creatures endued with ſuch prodigious abilities of mind, as theſe *lawyers* by the deſcription I gave of them muſt certainly be, were not rather encouraged to be inſtructors of others in wiſdom and knowledge. In anſwer to which I aſſured his Honour, that in all points out of their own trade, they were uſually the moſt ignorant and ſtupid generation among us, the moſt deſpicable in common converſation, avowed enemies to all knowledge and learning, and equally diſpoſed to pervert the general reaſon of mankind in every other ſubject of diſcourſe, as in that of their own profeſſion.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

A continuation of the ſtate of England under Queen Anne. The character of a firſt miniſter of ſtate in European courts.

MY maſter was yet wholly at a loſs to underſtand what motives could incite this race of *lawyers*, to perplex, diſquiet, and weary themſelves, and engage in a confederacy of injuſtice, merely for the ſake of injuring their fellow-animals; neither could he comprehend what I meant in ſaying, they did it for *hire*. Whereupon I was at much pains to deſcribe to him the uſe of *money*, the materials it was made of, and the value of the metals; that when a *Yahoo* had got a great ſtore of this precious ſubſtance, he was able to purchaſe whatever he had a mind to, the fineſt cloathing, the nobleſt houſes, great tracts of land, the moſt coſtly meats and drinks, and have his choice of the moſt beautiful females. Therefore, ſince *money* alone was able to perform all theſe feats, our *Yahoos* thought they could never have enough of it to ſpend, or to ſave, as they found themſelves inclined from their natural bent either to profuſion or avarice: That the rich man enjoyed the fruit of the poor man's labour, and the latter were a thouſand to one in proportion to the former: That the bulk of our people

People were forced to live miſerably, by labouring every day for ſmall wages, to make a few live plentifully. I enlarged myſelf much on theſe, and many other particulars to the ſame purpoſe: But his Honour was ſtill to ſeek; for he went upon a ſuppoſition, that all animals had a title to their ſhare in the productions of the earth, and eſpecially thoſe who preſided over the reſt. Therefore he deſired I would let him know, what theſe coſtly meats were, and how any of us happened to want them. Whereupon I enumerated as many ſorts as came into my head, with the various methods of dreſſing them, which could not be done without ſending veſſels by ſea to every part of the world, as well for liquors to drink, as for ſauces, and innumerable other conveniencies. I aſſured him, that this whole globe of earth muſt be at leaſt three times gone round, before one of our better female *Yahoos* could get her breakfaſt, or a cup to put it in. He ſaid, that muſt needs be a miſerable country which cannot furniſh food for its own inhabitants. But what he chiefly wondered at was, how ſuch vaſt tracts of ground, as I deſcribed, ſhould be wholly without *freſh water*, and the people put to the neceſſity of ſending over the ſea for drink. I replied, that England (the dear place of my nativity) was computed to produce three times the quantity of food, more than its inhabitants are able to conſume, as well as liquors extracted from grain, or preſſed out of the fruits of certain trees, which made excellent drink; and the

the ſame proportion in every other convenience of life. But in order to feed the luxury and intemperance of the males, and the vanity of the females, we ſent away the greateſt part of our neceſſary things to other countries; from whence we in return brought the materials of diſeaſes, folly, and vice, to ſpend among ourſelves. Hence it follows of neceſſity, that vaſt numbers of our people are compelled to ſeek their livelihood by begging, robbing, ſtealing, cheating, pimping, flattering, ſuborning, forſwearing, forging, gaming, lying, fawning, hectoring, voting, ſcribling, ſtar-gazing, poiſoning, whoring, canting, libeling, free-thinking, and the like occupations: Every one of which terms I was at much pains to make him underſtand.

That *wine* was not imported among us from foreign countries to ſupply the want of water, or other drinks, but becauſe it was a ſort of liquid, which made us merry by putting us out of our ſenſes, diverted all melancholy thoughts, begat wild extravagant imaginations in the brain, raiſed our hopes, and baniſhed our fears, ſuſpended every office of reaſon for a time, and deprived us of the uſe of our limbs, till we fell into a profound ſleep; although it muſt be confeſſed, that we always awaked ſick and diſpirited; and that the uſe of this liquor, filled us with diſeaſes, which made our lives uncomfortable and ſhort *.

But

* This account excites ideas of drunkenneſs, very different from thoſe which are conceived under the terms by which it is generally expreſſed. *Hawkeſ.*

But beſide all this, the bulk of our people ſupported themſelves by furniſhing the neceſſities or conveniencies of life to the rich, and to each other. For inſtance, when I am at home, and dreſſed as I ought to be, I carry on my body the workmanſhip of an hundred tradeſmen; the building and furniture of my houſe employ as many more, and five times the number to adorn my wife.

I was going on to tell him of another ſort of people, who get their livelihood by attending the ſick, having upon ſome occaſions informed his Honour that many of my crew had died of diſeaſes. But here it was with the utmoſt difficulty that I brought him to apprehend what I meant. He could eaſily conceive, that a Houyhnhnm grew weak and heavy a few days before his death, or by ſome accident might hurt a limb: But that nature, who works all things to perfection, ſhould ſuffer any pains to breed in our bodies, he thought it impoſſible, and deſired to know the reaſon of ſo unaccountable an evil. I told him, we fed on a thouſand things, which operated contrary to each other: That we eat them when we were not hungry, and drank without the provocation of thirſt: That we ſat whole nights drinking ſtrong liquors without eating a bit, which diſpoſed us to ſloth, enflamed our bodies, and precipitated or prevented digeſtion: That proſtitute female *Yahoos* acquired a certain malady, which bred rottenneſs in the bones of thoſe who fell into their embraces: That this and

many

many other diſeaſes were propagated from father to ſon; ſo that great numbers come into the world with complicated maladies upon them: That it would be endleſs to give him a catalogue of all diſeaſes incident to human bodies; for they could not be fewer than five or ſix hundred ſpread over every limb and joint; in ſhort, every part, external and inteſtine, having diſeaſes appropriated to itſelf. To remedy which, there was a ſort of people bred up among us in the profeſſion, or pretence, of curing the ſick. And becauſe I had ſome ſkill in the faculty, I would, in gratitude to his Honour, let him know the whole myſtery and method by which they proceed.

Their fundamental is, that all diſeaſes ariſe from *repletion*; from whence they conclude, that a great *evacuation* of the body is neceſſary, either through the natural paſſage, or upwards at their mouth. The next buſineſs is, from herbs, minerals, gums, oils, ſhells, ſalts, juices, ſea-weed, excrements, barks of trees, ſerpents, toads, frogs, ſpiders, dead mens fleſh and bones, birds, beaſts, and fiſhes, to form a compoſition for ſmell and taſte the moſt abominable, nauſeous, and deteſtable, they can poſſibly contrive, which the ſtomach immediately rejects with loathing; and this they call a *vomit*: Or elſe, from the ſame ſtore-houſe, with ſome other poiſonous additions, they command us to take in at the orifice, *above* or *below*, (juſt as the phyſician then happens to be diſpoſed) a medicine equally annoying and

diſguſtful

diſguſtful to the bowels; which, relaxing the belly, drives down all before it; and this they call a *purge* or a *clyſter*. For nature (as the phyſicians alledge) having intended the ſuperior anterior orifice only for the *intromiſſion* of ſolids and liquids, and the inferior poſterior for ejection; theſe artiſts ingeniouſly conſidering that in all diſeaſes nature is forced out of her ſeat, therefore to replace her in it, the body muſt be treated in a manner directly contrary, by interchanging the uſe of each orifice; forcing ſolids and liquids in at the *anus*, and making evacuations at the mouth.

But beſides real diſeaſes, we are ſubject to many that are only imaginary, for which the phyſicians have invented imaginary cures. Theſe have their ſeveral names, and ſo have the drugs that are proper for them; and with theſe our female *Yahoos* are always infeſted.

One great excellency in this tribe, is their ſkill at *prognoſtics*, wherein they ſeldom fail; their predictions in real diſeaſes, when they riſe to any degree of malignity, generally portending *death*, which is always in their power, when recovery is not: And therefore, upon any unexpected ſigns of amendment after they have pronounced their ſentence, rather than be accuſed as falſe prophets, they know how to approve their ſagacity to the world, by a ſeaſonable doſe.

They are likewiſe of ſpecial uſe to huſbands and wives, who are grown weary of their mates;

to eldeſt ſons, to great miniſters of ſtate, and often to princes.

I had formerly, upon occaſion, diſcourſed with my maſter upon the nature of *government* in general, and particularly of our own *excellent conſtitution*, deſervedly the wonder and envy of the whole world. But having here accidentally mentioned a *miniſter of ſtate*, he commanded me, ſome time after, to inform him, what ſpecies of *Yahoo* I particularly meant by that appellation.

I told him, that a firſt or chief miniſter of ſtate, who was the perſon I intended to deſcribe, was a creature wholly exempt from joy and grief, love and hatred, pity and anger; at leaſt, makes uſe of no other paſſions, but a violent deſire of wealth, power, and titles; that he applies his words to all uſes, except to the indication of his mind; that he never tells a *truth*, but with an intent that you ſhould take it for a *lie*: nor a *lie*, but with a deſign that you ſhould take it for a *truth*: That thoſe he ſpeaks worſt of behind their backs, are in the ſureſt way of preferment; and whenever he begins to praiſe you to others, or to yourſelf, you are from that day forlorn. The worſt mark you can receive is a *promiſe*, eſpecially when it is confirmed with an oath; after which every wiſe man retires, and gives over all hopes.

There are three methods, by which a man may riſe to be chief miniſter. The firſt is by knowing how with prudence to diſpoſe of a wife, a daughter, or a ſiſter: The ſecond, by betraying

or

or undermining his predeceſſor: And the third is, by a *furious zeal*, in public aſſemblies, againſt the corruptions of the court. But a wiſe prince would rather chooſe to employ thoſe, who practiſe the laſt of theſe methods; becauſe ſuch zealots prove always the moſt obſequious and ſubſervient to the will and paſſions of their maſters. That theſe *miniſters*, having all employments at their diſpoſal, preſerve themſelves in power, by bribing the majority of a ſenate or great council; and at laſt, by an expedient called an *act of indemnity*, (whereof I deſcribed the nature to him) they ſecure themſelves from after-reckonings, and retire from the public, laden with the ſpoils of the nation.

The palace of a *chief miniſter*, is a ſeminary to breed up others in his own trade: The pages, lacquies, and porter, by imitating their maſter, become *miniſters of ſtate* in their ſeveral diſtricts, and learn to excel in the three principal *ingredients*, of *inſolence*, *lying*, and *bribery*. Accordingly they have a *ſubaltern* court paid to them by perſons of the beſt rank; and ſometimes, by the force of dexterity and impudence, arrive through ſeveral gradations to be ſucceſſors to their lord.

He is uſually governed by a decayed wench, or favourite footman, who are the funnels through which all graces are conveyed, and may properly be called, *in the laſt reſort*, the governors of the kingdom. One day in diſcourſe, my maſter, having heard me mention the *nobility* of my country, was pleaſed to make me a compli-

ment, which I could not pretend to deſerve: That he was ſure, I muſt have been born of ſome noble family, becauſe I far exceeded in ſhape, colour, and cleanlineſs, all the *Yahoos* of his nation, although I ſeemed to fall in ſtrength and agility, which muſt be imputed to my different way of living from thoſe other brutes; and beſides, I was not only endued with the faculty of ſpeech, but likewiſe with ſome rudiments of reaſon, to a degree that with all his acquaintance I paſſed for a prodigy.

He made me obſerve, that among the Houyhnhnms, the *white*, the *ſorrel*, and the *iron-grey*, were not ſo exactly ſhaped as the *bay*, the *dapple-grey*, and the *black*; nor born with equal talents of mind, or a capacity to improve them; and therefore continued always in the condition of ſervants, without ever aſpiring to match out of their own race, which in that country would be reckoned monſtrous and unnatural.

I made his Honour my moſt humble acknowledgements, for the good opinion he was pleaſed to conceive of me; but aſſured him at the ſame time, that my birth was of the lower ſort, having been born of plain honeſt parents, who were juſt able to give me a tolerable education; that *nobility* among us was altogether a different thing from the idea he had of it; that our young noblemen are bred from their childhood in idleneſs and luxury; that, as ſoon as years will permit, they conſume their vigour, and contract odious diſeaſes among lewd females; and when their fortunes

fortunes are almoſt ruined, they marry ſome women of mean birth, diſagreeable perſon, and unſound conſtitution, merely for the ſake of money, whom they hate and deſpiſe: That the production of ſuch marriages are generally ſcrophulous, ricketty, or deformed children; by which means the family ſeldom continues above three generations, unleſs the wife takes care to provide a healthy father among her neighbours or domeſtics, in order to improve and continue the breed: That a weak diſeaſed body, a meagre countenance, and ſallow complexion, are the true marks of *noble blood*; and a healthy robuſt appearance is ſo diſgraceful in a man of quality, that the world concludes his real father to have been a *groom*, or a *coachman*. The imperfections of his mind run parallel with thoſe of his body, being a compoſition of ſpleen, dulneſs, ignorance, caprice, ſenſuality, and pride.

Without this conſent of this illuſtrious body, no law can be enacted, repealed, or altered; and theſe *nobles* have likewiſe the deciſions of all our poſſeſſions, without appeal.

CHAP. VII.

The author's great love of his native country. His maſter's obſervations upon the conſtitution and adminiſtration of England, as deſcribed by the author, with parallel caſes and compariſons. His maſter's obſervations upon human nature.

THE reader may be diſpoſed to wonder, how I could prevail on myſelf to give ſo free a repreſentation of my own ſpecies, among a race of mortals who are already too apt to conceive the vileſt opinion of human-kind, from that entire congruity betwixt me and their *Yahoos*. But I muſt freely confeſs, that the many virtues of thoſe excellent *Quadrupeds*, placed in oppoſite view to human corruptions, had ſo far opened my eyes, and enlarged my underſtanding, that I began to view the actions and paſſions of man in a very different light; and to think the honour of my own kind not worth managing; which beſides it was impoſſible for me to do, before a perſon of ſo acute a judgment as my maſter, who daily convinced me of a thouſand faults in myſelf, whereof I had not the leaſt perception before, and which with us would never be numbered even among human infirmities. I had likewiſe learned, from his example, an utter deteſtation

deteſtation of all falſhood or diſguiſe; and *truth* appeared ſo amiable to me, that I determined upon ſacrificing every thing to it.

Let me deal ſo candidly with the reader, as to confeſs, that there was yet a much ſtronger motive for the freedom I took in my repreſentation of things. I had not been a year in this country, before I contracted ſuch a love and veneration for the inhabitants, that I entered on a firm reſolution never to return to human-kind, but to paſs the reſt of my life among theſe admirable Houyhnhnms, in the contemplation and practice of every virtue, where I could have no example or incitement to vice. But it was decreed by fortune, my perpetual enemy, that ſo great a felicity ſhould not fall to my ſhare. However it is now ſome comfort to reflect, that in what I ſaid of my countrymen, I *extenuated* their faults as much as I durſt before ſo ſtrict an examiner; and upon every article gave as *favourable* a turn, as the matter would bear. For indeed who is there alive, that will not be ſwayed by his bias and partiality to the place of his birth?

I have related the ſubſtance of ſeveral converſations I had with my maſter, during the greateſt part of the time I had the honour to be in his ſervice; but have indeed, for brevity's ſake, omitted much more than is here ſet down.

When I had anſwered all his queſtions, and his curioſity ſeemed to be fully ſatisfied; he ſent for me one morning early, and commanding me to ſit down at ſome diſtance (an honour which he had

had never before conferred upon me), he ſaid, he had been very ſeriouſly conſidering my whole ſtory, as far as it related both to myſelf and my country: That he looked upon us as a ſort of animals, to whoſe ſhare, by what accident he could not conjecture, ſome ſmall pittance of *reaſon* had fallen, whereof we made no other uſe, than by its aſſiſtance to aggravate our *natural* corruptions, and to acquire new ones, which nature had not given us: That we diſarmed ourſelves of the few abilities ſhe had beſtowed; had been very ſucceſsful in multiplying our original wants, and ſeemed to ſpend our whole lives in vain endeavours to ſupply them by our own inventions: That as to myſelf, it was manifeſt I had neither the ſtrength or agility of a common *Yahoo*; that I walked infirmly on my hinder feet; had found out a contrivance to make my claws of no uſe or defence, and to remove the hair from my chin, which was intended as a ſhelter from the ſun and the weather. Laſtly, that I could neither run with ſpeed, nor climb trees like my *brethren* (as he called them) the *Yahoos* in this country.

That our inſtitutions of *government* and *law* were plainly owing to our groſs defects in *reaſon*, and by conſequence in *virtue*; becauſe *reaſon* alone is ſufficient to govern a *rational* creature; which was therefore a character we had no pretence to challenge, even from the account I had given of my own people: Although he manifeſtly perceived, that in order to favour them, I had conceal-

ed

ed many particulars, and often *ſaid the thing which was not.*

He was the more confirmed in his opinion, becauſe he obſerved, that as I agreed in every feature of my body with other *Yahoos*, except where it was to my real diſadvantage, in point of ſtrength, ſpeed, and activity, the ſhortneſs of my claws, and ſome other particulars where nature had no part; ſo from the repreſentation I had given him of our lives, our manners, and our actions, he found as near a reſemblance in the diſpoſition of our minds. He ſaid the *Yahoos* were known to hate one another, more than they did any different ſpecies of animals; and the reaſon uſually aſſigned was, the odiouſneſs of their own ſhapes, which all could ſee in the reſt, but not in themſelves. He had therefore begun to think it not unwiſe in us to *cover* our bodies, and by that invention, conceal many of our deformities from each other, which would elſe be hardly ſupportable. But he now found he had been miſtaken, and that the diſſenſions of thoſe brutes in his country, were owing to the ſame cauſe with ours, as I had deſcribed them. For if (ſaid he) you throw among five *Yahoos* as much food as would be ſufficient for fifty, they will, inſtead of eating peaceably, fall together by the ears, each ſingle one impatient to *have all to itſelf*; and therefore a ſervant was uſually employed to ſtand by while they were feeding abroad, and thoſe kept at home were tied at a diſtance from each other; that if a cow died of age or accident, before a Houyhnhnm could

could ſecure it for his own *Yahoos*, thoſe in the neighbourhood would come in herds to ſeize it, and then would enſue ſuch a battle as I had deſcribed, with terrible wounds made by their claws on both ſides, although they ſeldom were able to kill one another, for want of ſuch convenient inſtruments of death as we have invented. At other times, the like battles have been fought between the *Yahoos* of ſeveral neighbourhoods, without any viſible cauſe; thoſe of one diſtrict watching all opportunities to ſurpriſe the next, before they are prepared. But if they find their project hath miſcarried, they return home, and, for want of enemies, engage in what I call a civil war among themſelves.

That in ſome fields of his country, there are certain *ſhining ſtones* of ſeveral colours, whereof the *Yahoos* are violently fond; and when part of theſe *ſtones* is fixed in the earth, as it ſometimes happeneth, they will dig with their claws for whole days to get them out; then carry them away, and hide them by heaps in their kennels; but ſtill looking round with great caution, for fear their comrades ſhould find out their treaſure. My maſter ſaid he could never diſcover the reaſon of this unnatural appetite, or how theſe *ſtones* could be of any uſe to a *Yahoo*; but now he believed it might proceed from the ſame principle of *avarice*, which I had aſcribed to mankind: That he had once, by way of experiment, privately removed a heap of theſe *ſtones* from the place, where one of his *Yahoos* had buried it:

Whereupon

Whereupon the ſordid animal, miſſing his treaſure, by his loud lamenting, brought the whole herd to the place, there miſerably howled, then fell to biting and tearing the reſt; began to pine away, would neither eat, nor ſleep, nor work, till he ordered a ſervant privately to convey the *ſtones* into the ſame hole, and hide them as before; which when his *Yahoo* had found, he preſently recovered his ſpirits and good humour, but took care to remove them to a better hiding-place, and hath ever ſince been a very ſerviceable brute *.

My maſter farther aſſured me, which I alſo obſerved myſelf, that in the fields where *ſhining ſtones* abound, the fierceſt and moſt frequent battles are fought, occaſioned by perpetual inroads of the neighbouring *Yahoos*.

He ſaid, it was common, when two *Yahoos* diſcovered ſuch a *ſtone* in a field, and were contending which of them ſhould be the proprietor, a third would take the advantage, and carry it away from them both; which my maſter would needs contend to have ſome kind of reſemblance with our *ſuits at law*; wherein I thought it for our credit not to undeceive him, ſince the deciſion he mentioned was much more equitable than many decrees among us; becauſe the plaintiff and the defendant there loſt nothing beſide the *ſtone* they contended for, whereas our *courts of equity* would

* Nothing can be ſaid to make avarice a greater reproach to mankind, except that it is a vice which this deſcription will not cure. *Hawkeſ.*

would never have diſmiſſed the cauſe, while either of them had any thing left.

My maſter continuing his diſcourſe, ſaid, there was nothing that rendered the *Yahoos* more odious, than their undiſtinguiſhing appetite to devour every thing that came in their way, whether herbs, roots, berries, the corrupted fleſh of animals, or all mingled together: And it was peculiar in their temper, that they were fonder of what they could get by rapine or ſtealth at a greater diſtance, than much better food provided for them at home. If their prey held out, they would eat till they were ready to burſt, after which nature had pointed out to them a certain *root* that gave them a general evacuation.

There was alſo another kind of *root*, very *juicy*, but ſomewhat rare and difficult to be found, which the *Yahoos* ſought for with much eagerneſs, and would ſuck it with great delight; it produced in them the ſame effects, that wine hath upon us. It would make them ſometimes hug, and ſometimes tear one another; they would howl and grin, and chatter, and reel, and tumble, and then fall aſleep in the mud.

I did indeed obſerve, that the *Yahoos* were the only animals in this country ſubject to any diſeaſes; which, however, were much fewer than horſes have among us, and contracted, not by any ill treatment they meet with, but by the naſtineſs and greedineſs of that ſordid brute. Neither has their language any more than a general appellation for thoſe maladies, which is borrowed from

the name of the beaſt, and called *hnea-yahoo* or the *Yahoo's evil;* and the cure preſcribed is a mixture of *their own dung* and *urine*, forcibly put down the *Yahoo's* throat. This I have ſince often known to have been taken with ſucceſs, and do here freely recommend it to my countrymen, for the public good, as an admirable ſpecific againſt all diſeaſes produced by a repletion.

As to learning, government, arts, manufactures, and the like, my maſter confeſſed he could find little or no reſemblance between the *Yahoos* of that country and thoſe in ours. For he only meant to obſerve, what parity there was in our natures. He had heard indeed ſome curious Houyhnhnms obſerve, that in moſt herds there was a ſort of ruling *Yahoo* (as among us there is generally ſome leading or principal ſtag in a park) who was always more *deformed* in body, and *miſchievous in diſpoſition*, than any of the reſt: That this *leader* had uſually a favourite, as *like himſelf* as he could get, whoſe employment was to *lick his maſter's feet and poſteriors, and drive the female* Yahoos *to his kennel* *; for which he was now and then rewarded with a piece of aſs's fleſh. This *favourite* is hated by the whole herd, and therefore, to protect himſelf, keeps always *near the perſon of his leader*. He uſually continues in office, till a worſe can be found; but the very moment he is diſcarded, his ſucceſſor at the head of all the *Yahoos* in that diſtrict, young and old, male and female, come in a body, and diſcharge

* Flattery and pimping. *Hawkeſ.*

their excrements upon him from head to foot. But how far this might be applicable to our *courts*, and *favourites*, and *miniſters of ſtate*, my maſter ſaid I could beſt determine.

I durſt make no return to this malicious inſinuation, which debaſed human underſtanding below the ſagacity of a common *hound*, who hath judgment enough to diſtinguiſh and follow the cry of the *ableſt dog in the pack*, without being ever miſtaken.

My maſter told me there were ſome qualities remarkable in the *Yahoos*, which he had not obſerved me to mention, or at leaſt very ſlightly, in the accounts I had given him of human-kind. He ſaid thoſe animals, like other brutes, had their females in common; but in this they differed, that the ſhe *Yahoo* would admit the male, while ſhe was pregnant; and that the hees would quarrel and fight with the females, as with each other. Both which practices were ſuch degrees of infamous brutality, as no other ſenſitive creature ever arrived at.

Another thing he wondered at in the *Yahoos*, was their ſtrange diſpoſition to naſtineſs and dirt; whereas there appears to be a natural love of cleanlineſs in all other animals. As to the two former accuſations, I was glad to let them paſs without any reply, becauſe I had not a word to offer upon them in defence of my ſpecies, which otherwiſe I certainly had done from my own inclinations. But I could have eaſily vindicated human-kind from the imputation of ſingularity upon

upon the laſt article, if there had been any *ſwine* in that country (as unluckily for me there were not) which although it may be a *ſweeter quadruped* than a *Yahoo*, cannot, I humbly conceive, in juſtice pretend to more cleanlineſs; and ſo his Honour himſelf muſt have owned, if he had ſeen their filthy way of feeding, and their cuſtom of wallowing and ſleeping in the mud.

My maſter likewiſe mentioned another quality, which his ſervants had diſcovered in ſeveral *Yahoos*, and to him was wholly unaccountable. He ſaid, a fancy would ſometimes take a *Yahoo* to retire into a corner, to lie down, and howl and groan, and ſpurn away all that came near him, although he were young and fat, wanted neither food nor water, nor did the ſervants imagine what could poſſibly ail him. And the only remedy they found was, to ſet him to hard work, after which he would infallibly come to himſelf. To this I was ſilent out of partiality to my own kind; yet here I could plainly diſcover the true ſeeds of the *ſpleen*, which only ſeizeth on the *lazy*, the *luxurious*, and the *rich*; who, if they were forced to undergo the *ſame regimen*, I would undertake for the cure.

His Honour had farther obſerved, that a female *Yahoo* would often ſtand behind a bank or a buſh, to gaze on the young males paſſing by, and then appear, and hide, uſing many antic geſtures and grimaces, at which time it was obſerved that ſhe had a moſt *offenſive ſmell*; and when any of the males advanced, would ſlowly retire,

looking often back, and with a counterfeit ſhew of fear, run off into ſome convenient place, where ſhe knew the male would follow her.

At other times, if a female ſtranger came among them, three or four of her own ſex would get about her, and ſtare, and chatter, and grin, and ſmell her all over; and then turn off with geſtures, that ſeemed to expreſs contempt and diſdain.

Perhaps my maſter might refine a little in theſe ſpeculations which he had drawn from what he obſerved himſelf, or had been told him by others: However, I could not reflect without ſome amazement, and much ſorrow, that the rudiments of *lewdneſs*, *coquetry*, *cenſure*, and *ſcandal*, ſhould have place by inſtinct in womankind.

I expected every moment, that my maſter would accuſe the *Yahoos* of thoſe unnatural appetites in both ſexes, ſo common among us. But nature, it ſeems, hath not been ſo expert a ſchoolmiſtreſs; and theſe politer pleaſures are entirely the productions of art and reaſon on our ſide of the globe.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

The author relates ſeveral particulars of the Yahoos, *The great virtues of the* Houyhnhnms. *The education and exerciſe of their youth. Their general aſſembly.*

AS I ought to have underſtood human nature much better, than I ſuppoſed it poſſible for my maſter to do, ſo it was eaſy to apply the character he gave of the *Yahoos* to myſelf, and my countrymen; and I believed I could yet make farther diſcoveries from my own obſervation. I therefore often begged his Honour to let me go among the herds of *Yahoos* in the neighbourhood, to which he always very graciouſly conſented, being perfectly convinced, that the hatred I bore thoſe brutes would never ſuffer me to be corrupted by them; and his Honour ordered one of his ſervants, a ſtrong ſorrel nag, very honeſt and good-natured, to be my guard, without whoſe protection I durſt not undertake ſuch adventures. For I have already told the reader, how much I was peſtered by thoſe odious animals upon my firſt arrival. And I afterwards failed very narrowly three or four times of falling into their clutches, when I happened to ſtray at any diſtance without my hanger. And I have reaſon to believe they had ſome ima-

gination that I was of their own ſpecies, which I often aſſiſted myſelf by ſtripping up my ſleeves, and ſhewing my naked arms and breaſts in their ſight, when my protector was with me. At which times they would approach as near as they durſt, and imitate my actions after the manner of monkies, but ever with great ſigns of hatred; as a tame *jack-daw* with cap and ſtockings is always perſecuted by the wild ones, when he happens to be got among them.

They are prodigiouſly nimble from their infancy: However I once caught a young male of three years old, and endeavoured by all marks of tenderneſs to make it quiet; but the little imp fell a ſqualling, and ſcratching, and biting with ſuch violence, that I was forced to let it go; and it was high time, for a whole troop of old ones came about us at the noiſe; but finding the cub was ſafe, (for away it ran), and my ſorrel nag being by, they durſt not venture near us. I obſerved the young animal's fleſh to ſmell very rank, and the ſtink was ſomewhat between a *weaſel* and a *fox*, but much more diſagreeable. I forgot another circumſtance (and perhaps I might have the reader's pardon if it were wholly omitted) that while I held the odious vermin in my hands, it voided its filthy excrements of a yellow liquid ſubſtance all over my cloaths; but by good fortune there was a ſmall brook hard by, where I waſhed myſelf as clean as I could; although I durſt not come into my maſter's preſence, until I were ſufficiently aired.

By

By what I could diſcover, the *Yahoos* appear to be the moſt unteachable of all animals; their capacities never reaching higher than to draw or carry burthens. Yet I am of opinion, this defect ariſeth chiefly from a perverſe, reſtive diſpoſition. For they are cunning, malicious, treacherous, and revengeful. They are ſtrong and hardy, but of a cowardly ſpirit, and by conſequence inſolent, abject, and cruel. It is obſerved, that the *red-haired* of both ſexes are more libidinous and miſchievous than the reſt, whom yet they much exceed in ſtrength and activity.

The Houyhnhnms keep the *Yahoos* for preſent uſe, in huts not far from the houſe; but the reſt are ſent abroad to certain fields, where they dig up roots, eat ſeveral kinds of herbs, and ſearch about for carrion, or ſometimes catch *weaſels* and *luhimuhs* (a ſort of *wild rat*) which they greedily devour. Nature hath taught them to dig deep holes with their nails, on the ſide of a riſing ground, wherein they lie by themſelves: Only the kennels of the females are larger, ſufficient to hold two or three cubs.

They ſwim from their infancy like frogs, and are able to continue long under water, where they often take fiſh, which the females carry home to their young. And, upon this occaſion, I hope the reader will pardon my relating an odd adventure.

Being one day abroad with my protector, the ſorrel nag, and the weather exceeding hot, I entreated him to let me bathe in a river that was near.

near. He conſented, and I immediately ſtripped myſelf ſtark naked, and went down ſoftly into the ſtream. It happened that a young female *Yahoo*, ſtanding behind a bank, ſaw the whole proceeding, and, enflamed by deſire, as the nag and I conjectured, came running with all ſpeed, and leaped into the water within five yards of the place where I bathed. I was never in my life ſo terribly frighted; the nag was grazing at ſome diſtance, and not ſuſpecting any harm. She embraced me after a moſt fulſome manner: I roared as loud as I could, and the nag came galloping towards me; whereupon ſhe quitted her graſp with the utmoſt reluctancy, and leaped upon the oppoſite bank, where ſhe ſtood gazing and howling all the time I was putting on my cloaths.

This was a matter of diverſion to my maſter and his family, as well as mortification to myſelf. For now I could no longer deny, that I was a real *Yahoo* in every limb and feature, ſince the females had a natural propenſity to me, as one of their own ſpecies: Neither was the hair of this brute of a red colour (which might have been ſome excuſe for an appetite a little irregular) but black as a ſloe, and her countenance did not make an appearance altogether ſo hideous as the reſt of her kind: For, I think, ſhe could not be above eleven years old.

Having lived three years in this country, the reader I ſuppoſe will expect that I ſhould, like other travellers, give him ſome account of the manners

manners and cuſtoms of its inhabitants, which it was indeed my principal ſtudy to learn.

As theſe noble Houyhnhnms are endowed by nature with a general diſpoſition to all virtues, and have no conceptions or ideas of what is evil in a rational creature; ſo their grand maxim is, to cultivate *reaſon*, and to be wholly governed by it. Neither is *reaſon* among them a point problematical, as with us, where men can argue with plauſibility on both ſides of a queſtion; but ſtrikes you with immediate conviction; as it muſt needs do, where it is not mingled, obſcured, or diſcoloured, by paſſion and intereſt. I remember it was with extreme difficulty, that I could bring my maſter to underſtand the meaning of the word *opinion*, or how a point could be diſputable; becauſe *reaſon* taught us to affirm or deny only where we are certain; and beyond our knowledge we cannot do either. So that controverſies, wranglings, diſputes, and poſitiveneſs, in falſe or dubious propoſitions, are evils unknown among the Houyhnhnms. In the like manner, when I uſed to explain to him our ſeveral ſyſtems of *natural philoſophy*, he would laugh, that a creature pretending to *reaſon*, ſhould value itſelf upon the knowledge of other people's conjectures, and in things where that knowledge, if it were certain, could be of no uſe. Wherein he agreed intirely with the ſentiments of Socrates, as Plato delivers them; which I mention as the higheſt honour I can do to that prince of philoſophers. I have often ſince reflected, what deſtruction ſuch

2

a doctrine would make in the libraries of Europe; and how many paths to fame would be then ſhut up in the learned world.

Friendſhip and *benevolence* are the two principal virtues among the Houyhnhnms *; and theſe are not confined to particular objects, but univerſal to the whole race. For a ſtranger, from the remoteſt part, is equally treated with the neareſt neighbour; and wherever he goes, looks upon himſelf as at home. They preſerve *decency* and *civility* in the higheſt degrees, but are altogether ignorant of *ceremony*. They have no fondneſs for their colts or foals, but the care they take in educating them proceedeth entirely from the dictates of *reaſon* †. And I obſerved my maſter to ſhew the ſame affection to his neighbour's iſſue, that he had for his own. They will have it, that *nature* teaches them to love the whole ſpecies; and it is *reaſon* only that maketh a diſtinction of perſons, where there is a ſuperior degree of virtue ‡.

When the matron Houyhnhnms have produced one of each ſex, they no longer accompany with their conſorts, except they loſe one of their iſſue by

* Their virtuous qualities are only negative. *Orrery.*

† We here view the pure inſtincts of brutes, acting in their narrow ſphere, merely for their immediate preſervation. *Orrery.*

‡ It may perhaps be thought ſomewhat ſtrange, that the ſenſe of the noble commentator ſhould appear to be directly oppoſite to that of the author, in the paſſages which theſe notes were intended to illuſtrate. But this apparent oppoſition may ariſe merely from their uſing the ſame word in an oppoſite ſenſe; as by the word *candour*, his Lordſhip always means a quality which

by ſome caſualty, which very ſeldom happens: But in ſuch a caſe they meet again; or when the like accident befalls a perſon whoſe wife is paſt bearing, ſome other couple beſtow him one of their own colts, and then go together again untill the mother is pregnant. This caution is neceſſary to prevent the country from being overburthened with numbers. But the race of inferior Houyhnhnms, bred up to be ſervants, is not ſo ſtrictly limited upon this article; theſe are allowed to produce three of each ſex to be domeſtics in the noble families.

In their marriages they are exactly careful to chuſe ſuch colours as will not make any diſagreeable mixture in the breed. *Strength* is chiefly valued in the male, and *comelineſs* in the female: Not upon the account of *love*, but to preſerve the race from degenerating; for where a female happens to excel in *ſtrength*, a conſort is choſen with regard to *comelineſs*.

Courtſhips, love, preſents, jointures, ſettlements, have no place in their thoughts, or terms whereby to expreſs them in their language. The young couple meet, and are joined, merely becauſe it is the determination of their parents and friends: It is what they ſee done every day, and they

which inclines a man to put the worſt conſtruction upon the words and actions of another; and by *candour*, the Dean always means juſt the contrary.

Compare the note from Orrery in Gulliver's travels, Vol. V. p. 71. with Swift's apology for the Tale of a Tub, in Vol. I. p. 186.

they look upon it as one of the neceſſary actions of a reaſonable being. But the violation of marriage, or any other unchaſtity, was never heard of: And the married pair paſs their lives with the ſame friendſhip, and mutual benevolence, that they bear to all others of the ſame ſpecies who come in their way; without jealouſy, fondneſs, quarrelling, or diſcontent.

In educating the youth of both ſexes, their method is admirable, and highly deſerveth our imitation. Theſe are not ſuffered to taſte a grain of *oats*, except upon certain days, till eighteen years old; nor *milk*, but very rarely; and in ſummer they graze two hours in the morning, and as many in the evening, which their parents likewiſe obſerve; but the ſervants are not allowed above half that time, and a great part of their graſs is brought home, which they eat at the moſt convenient hours, when they can be beſt ſpared from work.

Temperance, *induſtry*, *exerciſe*, and *cleanlineſs*, are the leſſons equally enjoined to the young ones of both ſexes: And my maſter thought it monſtrous in us to give the females a different kind of education from the males, except in ſome articles of domeſtic management; whereby, as he truly obſerved, one half of our natives were good for nothing but bringing children into the world: And to truſt the care of our children to ſuch uſeleſs animals, he ſaid, was yet a greater inſtance of brutality.

But the Houyhnhnms train up their youth to ſtrength, ſpeed, and hardineſs, by exerciſing them in running races up and down ſteep hills, and over hard ſtony grounds; and when they are all in a ſweat, they are ordered to leap, over head and ears, into a pond or river. Four times a year the youth of a certain diſtrict meet, to ſhew their proficiency in running and leaping, and other feats of ſtrength and agility; where the victor is rewarded, with a ſong in his or her praiſe. On this feſtival, the ſervants drive a herd of *Yahoos* into the field, laden with hay, and oats, and milk, for repaſt to the Houyhnhnms; after which theſe brutes are immediately driven back again, for fear of being noiſome to the aſſembly.

Every fourth year, at the *vernal equinox*, there is a repreſentative council of the whole nation, which meets in a plain about twenty miles from our houſe, and continueth about five or ſix days. Here they enquire into the ſtate and condition of the ſeveral diſtricts; whether they abound, or be deficient in hay or oats, or cows or *Yahoos?* And wherever there is any want (which is but ſeldom) it is immediately ſupplied by unanimous conſent and contribution. Here likewiſe the regulation of children is ſettled: As for inſtance, if a Houyhnhnm hath too males, he changeth one of them with another that hath too females; and when a child hath been loſt by any caſualty, where the mother is paſt breeding, it is determined what family in the diſtrict ſhall breed another to ſupply the loſs.

CHAP. IX.

A grand debate at the general aſſembly of the Hquyhnhnms, *and how it was determined. The learning of the* Houyhnhnms. *Their buildings. Their manner of burials. The defectiveneſs of their language.*

ONE of theſe grand aſſemblies was held in my time, about three months before my departure, whether my maſter went as the repreſentative of our diſtrict. In this council was reſumed their old debate, and indeed the only debate that ever happened in their country; whereof my maſter, after his return, gave me a very particular account.

The queſtion to be debated was, Whether the *Yahoos* ſhould be exterminated from the face of the earth? One of the *members* for the affirmative, offered ſeveral arguments of great ſtrength and weight; alledging, that as the *Yahoos* were the moſt filthy, noiſome, and deformed animal which nature ever produced, ſo they were the moſt reſtive and indocible, miſchievous and malicious: They would privately ſuck the teats of the Houyhnhnms cows; kill and devour their cats, trample down their oats and graſs, if they were not continually watched, and commit a thouſand other extravagancies. He took notice

tice of a general tradition, that *Yahoos* had not been always in their country; but that, many ages ago, two of theſe brutes appeared together upon a mountain; whether produced by the heat of the ſun, and corrupted mud and ſlime, or from the ooze and froth of the ſea, was never known: That theſe *Yahoos* engendered, and their brood in a ſhort time grew ſo numerous as to over-run and infeſt the whole nation: That the Houyhnhnms, to get rid of this evil, made a general hunting, and at laſt incloſed the whole herd; and deſtroying the elder, every Houyhnhnm kept two young ones in a kennel, and brought them to ſuch a degree of tameneſs, as an animal ſo ſavage by nature can be capable of acquiring; uſing them for draught and carriage: That there ſeemed to be much truth in this tradition, and that thoſe creatures could not be Ylnhniamſhy (or *aborogines* of the land) becauſe of the violent hatred the Houyhnhnms, as well as all other animals, bore them; which although their evil diſpoſition ſufficiently deſerved, could never have arrived at ſo high a degree, if they had been Aborigines; or elſe they would have long ſince been rooted out: That the inhabitants, taking a fancy to uſe the ſervice of the *Yahoos*, had very imprudently neglected to cultivate the breed of *aſſes*, which are a comely animal, eaſily kept, more tame and orderly, without any offenſive ſmell, ſtrong enough for labour, although they yield to the other in agility of body; and, if

their braying be no agreeable ſound, it is far preferable to the horrible howlings of the *Yahoos*.

Several others declared their ſentiments to the ſame purpoſe, when my maſter propoſed an expedient to the aſſembly, whereof he had indeed borrowed the hint from me. He approved of the tradition mentioned by the *honourable member* who ſpoke before; and affirmed, that the two *Yahoos*, ſaid to be firſt ſeen among them, had been driven thither over the ſea: That coming to land, and being forſaken by their companions, they retired to the mountains, and, degenerating by degrees, became, in proceſs of time, much more ſavage than thoſe of their own ſpecies in the country from whence theſe two originals came. The reaſon of this aſſertion was, that he had now in his poſſeſſion a certain wonderful *Yahoo* (meaning myſelf) which moſt of them had heard of, and many of them had ſeen. He then related to them, how he firſt found me: That my body was all covered with an artificial compoſure of the ſkins and hairs of other animals: That I ſpoke in a language of my own, and had thoroughly learned theirs: That I had related to him the accidents which brought me thither: That, when he ſaw me without my covering, I was an exact *Yahoo* in every part, only of a whiter colour, leſs hairy, and with ſhorter claws. He added, how I had endeavoured to perſuade him, that, in my own and other countries, the *Yahoos* acted as the governing, rational animal, and held the Houyhnhnms

in

in ſervitude: That he obſerved in me all the qualities of a *Yahoo*, only a little more civilized by ſome tincture of reaſon; which, however, was in a degree as far inferior to the Houyhnhnm race, as the *Yahoos* of their country were to me: That, among other things, I mentioned a cuſtom we had, of *caſtrating* Houyhnhnms when they were young, in order to render them tame; that the operation was eaſy and ſafe; that it was no ſhame to learn wiſdom from brutes, as induſtry is taught by the ant, and building by the ſwallow (for ſo I tranſlate the word *lyhannh*, although it be a much larger fowl): That this invention might be practiſed upon the younger *Yahoos* here, which, beſides rendering them tractable and fitter for uſe, would in an age put an end to the whole ſpecies, without deſtroying life: That in the mean time the Houyhnhnms ſhould be *exhorted* to cultivate the breed of aſſes, which as they are in all reſpects more valuable brutes, ſo they have this advantage, to be fit for ſervice at five years old, which the others are not till twelve.

This was all my maſter thought fit to tell me at that time, of what paſſed in the grand council. But he was pleaſed to conceal one particular, which related perſonally to myſelf, whereof I ſoon felt the unhappy effect, as the reader will know in its proper place, and from whence I date all the ſucceeding misfortunes of my life.

The Houyhnhnms have no letters, and conſequently their knowledge is all traditional. But there happening few events of any moment a-

mong a people ſo well united, naturally diſpoſed to every virtue, wholly governed by reaſon, and cut off from all commerce with other nations; the hiſtorical part is eaſily preſerved without burthening their memories. I have already obſerved, that they are ſubject to no diſeaſes, and therefore can have no need of phyſicians. However, they have excellent medicines, compoſed of herbs, to cure accidental bruiſes and cuts in the paſtern or frog of the foot by the ſharp ſtones, as well as other maims and hurts in the ſeveral parts of the body.

They calculate the year by the revolution of the ſun and the moon, but uſe no ſubdiviſions into weeks. They are well enough acquainted with the motions of thoſe two luminaries, and underſtand the nature of *eclipſes*; and this is the utmoſt progreſs of their *aſtronomy*.

In *poetry* they muſt be allowed to excel all other mortals; wherein the juſtneſs of their ſimilies, and the minuteneſs as well as exactneſs of their deſcriptions, are indeed inimitable. Their verſes abound very much in both of theſe; and uſually contain either ſome exalted notions of friendſhip and benevolence, or the praiſes of thoſe who were victors in races and other bodily exerciſes. Their buildings, although very rude and ſimple, are not inconvenient, but well contrived to defend them from all injuries of cold and heat. They have a kind of tree, which at forty years old looſens in the root, and falls with the firſt ſtorm; it grows very ſtrait, and being pointed

pointed like ſtakes, with a ſharp ſtone (for the Houyhnhnms know not the uſe of iron) they ſtick them erect in the ground about ten inches aſunder, and then weave it in oat-ſtraw, or ſometimes wattles betwixt them. The roof is made after the ſame manner, and ſo are the doors.

The Houyhnhnms uſe the hollow part, between the paſtern and the hoof, of their fore-feet, as we do our hands, and this with greater dexterity than I could at firſt imagine. I have ſeen a white mare of our family thread a needle (which I lent her on purpoſe) with that joint. They milk their cows, reap their oats, and do all the work which requires hands in the ſame manner. They have a kind of hard flints, which, by grinding againſt their ſtones, they form into inſtruments, that ſerve inſtead of wedges, axes, and hammers. With tools made of theſe flints, they likewiſe cut their hay, and reap their oats, which there grow naturally in ſeveral fields. The *Yahoos* draw home the ſhaves in carriages, and the ſervants tread them in certain covered huts to get out the grain, which is kept in ſtores. They make a rude kind of earthen and wooden veſſels, and bake the former in the ſun.

If they can avoid caſualties, they die only of old age, and are buried in the obſcureſt places that can be found, their friends and relations expreſſing neither joy nor grief at their departure; nor does the dying perſon diſcover the leaſt regret that he is leaving the world, any more than if he were upon returning home from a viſit

to one of his neighbours. I remember my maſter having once made an appointment with a friend and his family to come to his houſe upon ſome affairs of importance, on the day fixed the miſtreſs and her two children came very late. She made two excuſes, firſt for her huſband, who, as ſhe ſaid, happened that very morning to *Ihnuwnh*. The word is ſtrongly expreſſive in their language, but not eaſily rendered into Engliſh; it ſignifies *to retire to his firſt mother*. Her excuſe for not coming ſooner was, that her huſband dying late in the morning, ſhe was a good while conſulting her ſervants about a convenient place where his body ſhould be laid; and I obſerved, ſhe behaved herſelf at our houſe as chearfully as the reſt: She died about three months after.

They live generally to ſeventy, or ſeventy-five years, very ſeldom to four-ſcore: Some weeks before their death, they feel a gradual decay; but without pain. During this time they are much viſited by their friends, becauſe they cannot go abroad with their uſual eaſe and ſatisfaction. However, about ten days before their death, which they ſeldom fail in computing, they return the viſits that have been made them by thoſe who are neareſt in the neighbourhood, being carried in a convenient ſledge drawn by *Yahoos*; which vehicle they uſe, not only upon this occaſion, but when they grow old, upon long journies, or when they are lamed by accident. And therefore, when the dying Houyhnhnms return thoſe viſits, they take a ſolemn leave of their friends,

friends, as if they were going to ſome remote part of the country, where they deſigned to paſs the reſt of their lives.

I know not whether it may be worth obſerving, that the Houyhnhnms have no word in their language to expreſs any thing that is *evil*, except what they borrow from the deformities or ill qualities of the *Yahoos*. Thus they denote the folly of a ſervant, an omiſſion of a child, a ſtone that cuts their feet, a continuance of foul or unſeaſonable weather, and the like, by adding to each the epithet of *Yahoo*: For inſtance, *hhnm Yahoo*, *whnaholn Yahoo*, *ynlhmndwihlma Yahoo*; and an ill contrived houſe, *ynholmhnmrohlnw Yahoo*.

I could with great pleaſure enlarge farther upon the manners and virtues of this excellent people; but intending in a ſhort time to publiſh a volume by itſelf expreſsly upon that ſubject, I refer the reader thither; and, in the mean time, proceed to relate my own ſad cataſtrophe.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

The author's œconomy, and happy life, among the Houyhnhnms. His great improvement in virtue, by converſing with them. Their converſations. The author hath notice given him by his maſter, that he muſt depart from the country. He falls into a ſwoon for grief; but ſubmits. He contrives and finiſhes a canoe by the help of a fellow-ſervant, and puts to ſea at a venture.

I HAD ſettled my little œconomy to my own heart's content. My maſter had ordered a room to be made for me after their manner, about ſix yards from the houſe; the ſides and floors of which I plaiſtered with clay, and covered with ruſh-mats of my own contriving. I had beaten hemp, which there grows wild, and made of it a ſort of ticking: This I filled with the feathers of ſeveral birds I had taken with ſpringes made of *Yahoos* hairs, and were excellent food. I had worked two chairs with my knife, the ſorrel nag helping me in the groſſer and more laborious part. When my cloaths were worn to rags, I made myſelf others with the ſkins of rabbits, and of a certain beautiful animal about the ſame ſize, called *nnuhnoh*, the ſkin of which is covered with a fine down. Of theſe I alſo made very tolerable ſtockings. I ſoaled my ſhoes with wood, which

which I cut from a tree, and fitted to the upper-leather; and when this was worn out, I ſupplied it with the ſkins of *Yahoos* dried in the ſun. I often got honey out of hollow trees, which I mingled with water, or eat with my bread. No man could more verify the truth of theſe two maxims, *That nature is very eaſily ſatisfied;* and, *That neceſſity is the mother of invention.* I enjoyed perfect health of body, and tranquillity of mind: I did not feel the treachery or inconſtancy of a friend, nor the injuries of a ſecret or open enemy. I had no occaſion of bribing, flattering, or pimping, to procure the favour of any great man, or of his minion. I wanted no defence againſt fraud or oppreſſion: Here was neither phyſician to deſtroy my body, nor lawyer to ruin my fortune; no informer to watch my words and actions, or forge accuſations againſt me for hire: Here were no gibers, cenſurers, back-biters, pick-pockets, highwaymen, houſe-breakers, attornies, bawds, buffoons, gameſters, politicians, wits, ſplenetics, tedious talkers, controvertiſts, raviſhers, murderers, robbers, virtuoſo's; no leaders or followers of party and faction; no encouragers to vice by ſeducement or examples; no dungeon, axes, gibbets, whipping-poſts, or pillories; no cheating ſhopkeepers or mechanics; no pride, vanity, or affectation; no fops, bullies, drunkards, ſtrolling whores, or poxes; no ranting, lewd, expenſive wives; no ſtupid, proud pedants; no importunate, over-bearing, quarrelſome, noiſy, roaring, empty, conceited, ſwearing companions:

No

No ſcoundrels raiſed from the duſt upon the merit of their vices, or nobility thrown into it on account of their virtues; no lords, fiddlers, judges, or dancing-maſters.

I had the favour of being admitted to ſeveral Houyhnhnms, who came to viſit or dine with my maſter; where his Honour graciouſly ſuffered me to wait in the room, and liſten to their diſcourſe. Both he and his company would often deſcend to aſk me queſtions, and receive my anſwers. I had alſo ſometimes the honour of attending my maſter in his viſits to others. I never preſumed to ſpeak, except in anſwer to a queſtion; and then I did it with inward regret, becauſe it was a loſs of ſo much time for improving myſelf: But I was infinitely delighted with the ſtation of an humble auditor in ſuch converſations, where nothing paſſed but what was uſeful, expreſſed in the feweſt and moſt inſignificant words: Where (as I have already ſaid) the greateſt *decency* was obſerved, without the leaſt degree of ceremony; where no perſon ſpoke, without being pleaſed himſelf, and pleaſing his companions; where there was no interruption, tediouſneſs, heat, or difference of ſentiments. They have a notion, that, when people are met together, a ſhort ſilence doth much improve converſation: This I found to be true; for during thoſe little intermiſſions of talk, new ideas would ariſe in their minds, which very much enlivened the diſcourſe. Their ſubjects are generally on friendſhip and benevolence, on order and œconomy;

ſometimes upon the viſible operations of nature, or ancient traditions; upon the bounds and limits of virtue; upon the unerring rules of reaſon, or upon ſome determinations to be taken at the next great aſſembly; and often upon the various excellencies of *poetry*. I may add, without vanity, that my preſence often gave them ſufficient matter for diſcourſe, becauſe it afforded my maſter an occaſion of letting his friends into the hiſtory of me and my country, upon which they were all pleaſed to deſcant, in a manner not very advantageous to human-kind: And for that reaſon I ſhall not repeat what they ſaid; only I may be allowed to obſerve, that his Honour, to my great admiration, appeared to underſtand the nature of *Yahoos* much better than myſelf. He went through all our vices and follies, and diſcovered many which I had never mentioned to him, by only ſuppoſing what qualities a *Yahoo* of their country, with a ſmall proportion of reaſon, might be capable of exerting; and concluded, with too much probability, how vile, as well as miſerable, ſuch a creature muſt be.

I freely confeſs, that all the little knowledge I have of any value, was acquired by the lectures I received from my maſter, and from hearing the diſcourſes of him and his friends; to which I ſhould be prouder to liſten, than to dictate to the greateſt and wiſeſt aſſembly in Europe. I admired the ſtrength, comelineſs, and ſpeed of the inhabitants; and ſuch a conſtellation of virtue, in ſuch amiable perſons, produced in me the higheſt

veneration. At firſt indeed I did not feel that natural awe, which the *Yahoos*, and all other animals, bear towards them; but it grew upon me by degrees much ſooner than I imagined, and was mingled with a reſpectful love and gratitude, that they would condeſcend to diſtinguiſh me from the reſt of my ſpecies.

When I thought of my family, my friends, my countrymen, or human race in general, I conſidered them, as they really were, *Yahoos* in ſhape and diſpoſition, perhaps a little more civilized, and qualified with the gift of ſpeech; but making no other uſe of reaſon, than to improve and multiply thoſe vices, whereof their brethren in this country had only the ſhare that nature allotted them. When I happened to behold the reflection of my own form in a lake or a fountain, I turned away my face in horror and deteſtation of myſelf; and could better endure the ſight of a common *Yahoo*, than of my own perſon. By converſing with the Houyhnhnms, and looking upon them with delight, I fell to imitate their gait and geſture, which is now grown into an habit; and my friends often tell me in a blunt way, that *I trot like a horſe*; which however I take for a great compliment: Neither ſhall I diſown, that in ſpeaking I am apt to fall into the voice and manner of the Houyhnhnms, and hear myſelf ridiculed on that account without the leaſt mortification.

In the midſt of all this happineſs, and when I looked upon myſelf to be fully ſettled for life, my

my maſter ſent for me one morning a little earlier than his uſual hour. I obſerved by his countenance, that he was in ſome perplexity, and at a loſs how to begin what he had to ſpeak. After a ſhort ſilence, he told me, he did not know how I would take what he was going to ſay: That in the laſt general aſſembly, when the affair of the *Yahoos* was entered upon, the repreſentatives had taken offence at his keeping a *Yahoo* (meaning myſelf) in his family, more like a Houyhnhnm than a brute animal: That he was known frequently to converſe with me, as if he could receive ſome advantage or pleaſure in my company: That ſuch a practice was not agreeable to reaſon or nature, or a thing ever heard of before among them. The aſſembly did therefore *exhort* him, either to employ me like the reſt of my ſpecies, or command me to ſwim back to the place from whence I came: That the firſt of theſe expedients was utterly rejected by all the Houyhnhnms, who had ever ſeen me at his houſe or their own; for they alledged, that becauſe I had ſome rudiments of reaſon, added to the natural pravity of thoſe animals, it was to be feared I might be able to ſeduce them into the woody and mountainous parts of the country, and bring them in troops by night to deſtroy the Houyhnhnms cattle, as being naturally of the ravenous kind, and averſe from labour.

My maſter added, that he was daily preſſed by the Houyhnhnms of the neighbourhood, to have

the aſſembly's *exhortation* executed, which he could not put off much longer. He doubted it would be impoſſible for me to ſwim to another country; and therefore wiſhed I would contrive ſome ſort of vehicle, reſembling thoſe I had deſcribed to him, that might carry me on the ſea; in which work I ſhould have the aſſiſtance of his own ſervants, as well as thoſe of his neighbours. He concluded, that for his own part he could have been content to keep me in his ſervice as long as I lived; becauſe he found I had cured myſelf of ſome bad habits and diſpoſitions, by endeavouring, as far as my inferior nature was capable, to imitate the Houyhnhnms.

I ſhould here obſerve to the reader, that a decree of the general aſſembly in this country is expreſſed by the word *hnhloayn*, which ſignifies an *exhortation*, as near as I can render it; for they have no conception how a rational creature can be *compelled*, but only adviſed, or *exhorted*; becauſe no perſon can diſobey reaſon, without giving up his claim to be a rational creature.

I was ſtruck with the utmoſt grief and deſpair at my maſter's diſcourſe; and being unable to ſupport the agonies I was under, I fell into a ſwoon at his feet. When I came to myſelf, he told me, that he concluded I had been dead (for theſe people are ſubject to no ſuch imbecillities of nature.) I anſwered, in a faint voice, that death would have been too great an happineſs: That although I could not blame the aſſembly's *exhortation*, or the urgency of his friends; yet, in my weak

weak and corrupt judgment, I thought it might conſiſt with reaſon to have been leſs rigorous: That I could not ſwim a league, and probably the neareſt land to theirs might be diſtant above an hundred: That many materials, neceſſary for making a ſmall veſſel to carry me off, were wholly wanting in this country; which however I would attempt in obedience and gratitude to his Honour, although I concluded the thing to be impoſſible, and therefore looked on myſelf as already devoted to deſtruction: That the certain proſpect of an unnatural death, was the leaſt of my evils; for ſuppoſing I ſhould eſcape with life by ſome ſtrange adventure, how could I think, with temper, of paſſing my days among *Yahoos*, and relapſing into my old corruptions, for want of examples to lead and keep me within the paths of virtue: That I knew too well upon what ſolid reaſons all the determinations of the wiſe Houyhnhnms were founded, not to be ſhaken by arguments of mine, a miſerable *Yahoo*: And therefore, after preſenting him with my humble thanks for the offer of his ſervants aſſiſtance in making a veſſel, and deſiring a reaſonable time for ſo difficult a work, I told him I would endeavour to preſerve a wretched being; and if ever I returned to England, was not without hopes of being uſeful to my own ſpecies, by celebrating the praiſes of the renowned Houyhnhnms, and propoſing their virtues to the imitation of mankind.

My maſter, in a few words, made me a very gracious reply, allowed me the ſpace of two

months to finiſh my boat; and ordered the ſorrel nag, my fellow-ſervant, (for ſo at this diſtance I may preſume to call him), to follow my inſtructions; becauſe I told my maſter, that his help would be ſufficient, and I knew he had a tenderneſs for me.

In his company, my firſt buſineſs was to go to that part of the coaſt, where my rebellious crew had ordered me to be ſet on ſhore. I got upon a height, and looking on every ſide into the ſea, fancied I ſaw a ſmall iſland towards the *north-eaſt*. I took out my pocket-glaſs, and could then clearly diſtinguiſh it about five leagues off, as I computed; but it appeared to the ſorrel nag to be only a blue cloud: For as he had no conception of any country beſide his own, ſo he could not be as expert in diſtinguiſhing remote objects at ſea, as we who ſo much converſe in that element.

After I had diſcovered this iſland, I conſidered no farther; but reſolved it ſhould, if poſſible, be the firſt place of my baniſhment, leaving the conſequence to fortune.

I returned home, and conſulting with the ſorrel nag, we went into a copſe at ſome diſtance, where I with my knife, and he with a ſharp flint faſtened very artificially after their manner to a wooden handle, cut down ſeveral oak wattles, about the thickneſs of a walking-ſtaff, and ſome larger pieces. But I ſhall not trouble the reader with a particular deſcription of my own mechanics: Let it ſuffice to ſay, that in ſix weeks time, with the help of the ſorrel nag, who performed the

the parts that required moſt labour, I finiſhed a ſort of Indian canoe, but much larger, covering it with the ſkins of *Yahoos*, well ſtitched together with hempen threads of my own making. My ſail was likewiſe compoſed of the ſkins of the ſame animal; but I made uſe of the youngeſt I could get, the older being too tough and thick; and I likewiſe provided myſelf with four paddles. I laid in a ſtock of boiled fleſh, of rabbits and fowls; and took with me two veſſels, one filled with milk, and the other with water.

I tried my canoe in a large pond near my maſter's houſe, and then corrected in it what was amiſs; ſtopping all the chinks with *Yahoos* tallow, till I found it ſtaunch, and able to bear me and my freight. And, when it was as complete as I could poſſibly make it, I had it drawn on a carriage very gently by *Yahoos* to the ſea-ſide, under the conduct of the ſorrel nag, and another ſervant.

When all was ready, and the day came for my departure, I took leave of my maſter and lady and the whole family, mine eyes flowing with tears, and my heart quite ſunk with grief. But his Honour, out of curioſity, and perhaps (if I may ſpeak it without vanity) partly out of kindneſs, was determined to ſee me in my canoe; and got ſeveral friends to accompany him. I was forced to wait above an hour for the tide; and then obſerving the wind very fortunately bearing towards the iſland to which I intended to ſteer my courſe, I took a ſecond leave of my maſter:

But,

But, as I was going to proſtrate myſelf to kiſs his hoof, he did me the honour to raiſe it gently to my mouth. I am not ignorant how much I have been cenſured for mentioning this laſt particular. Detractors are pleaſed to think it improbable, that ſo illuſtrious a perſon ſhould deſcend to give ſo great a mark of diſtinction to a creature ſo inferior as I. Neither have I forgotten how apt ſome travellers are to boaſt of extraordinary favours they have received: But if their cenſurers were better acquainted with the noble and courteous diſpoſition of the Houyhnhnms, they would ſoon change their opinion.

I paid my reſpects to the reſt of the Houyhnhnms in his Honour's company; then getting into my canoe, I puſhed off from ſhore.

CHAP. XI*.

The author's dangerous voyage. He arrives at New-Holland, hoping to ſettle there. Is wounded with an arrow by one of the natives. Is ſeized and carried by force into a Portugueze ſhip. The great civilities of the captain. The author arrives at England.

I BEGAN this deſperate voyage on February 15, 1714-15, at 9 o'clock in the morning. The wind was very favourable; however I made uſe

* This chapter, properly ſpeaking, is the laſt chapter of Gulliver's Travels; the 12th being only a ſort of critic, and a very bad one too, upon the whole work in general. Swift.

uſe at firſt only of my paddles; but conſidering I ſhould ſoon be weary, and that the wind might chop about, I ventured to ſet up my little ſail; and thus, with the help of the tide, I went at the rate of a league and a half an hour, as near as I could gueſs. My maſter and his friends continued on the ſhore, till I was almoſt out of ſight; and I often heard the ſorrel nag (who always loved me) crying out, *hnuy illa nyha majah Yahoo*, Take care of thyſelf, gentle *Yahoo*.

My deſign was, if poſſible, to diſcover ſome ſmall iſland, uninhabited, yet ſufficient by my labour to furniſh me with the neceſſaries of life, which I would have thought a greater happineſs, than to be firſt miniſter in the politeſt court of Europe; ſo horrible was the idea I conceived of returning to live in the ſociety, and under the government, of *Yahoos*. For, in ſuch a ſolitude as I deſired, I could at leaſt enjoy my own thoughts, and reflect with delight on the virtues of theſe inimitable Houyhnhnms, without any opportunity of degenerating into the vices and corruptions of my own ſpecies.

The reader may remember what I related, when my crew conſpired againſt me, and confined me to my cabbin: How I continued there ſeveral weeks, without knowing what courſe we took; and when I was put a-ſhore in the long-boat, how the ſailors told me, with oaths, whether true or falſe, that they knew not in what part of the world we were. However, I did then believe us to be about ten degrees South-

ward

ward of the Cape of Good-Hope, or about 45 degrees Southern latitude, as I gathered from ſome general words I overheard among them, being I ſuppoſed to the South-Eaſt in their intended voyage to Madagaſcar. And although this were but little better than conjecture, yet I reſolved to ſteer my courſe Eaſtward, hoping to reach the South-Weſt coaſt of New-Holland, and perhaps ſome ſuch iſland as I deſired, lying Weſtward of it. The wind was full Weſt; and by ſix in the evening I computed I had gone Eaſtward at leaſt eighteen leagues, when I eſpied a very ſmall iſland about half a league off, which I ſoon reached. It was nothing but a rock, with one creek naturally arched by the force of tempeſts. Here I put in my canoe, and climbing a part of the rock, I could plainly diſcover land to the Eaſt, extending from South to North. I lay all night in my canoe; and repeating my voyage early in the morning, I arrived in ſeven hours to the South-Eaſt point of New-Holland. This confirmed me in the opinion I have long entertained, that the *maps* and *charts* place this country at leaſt three degrees more to the Eaſt than it really is; which thought I communicated many years ago to my worthy friend, Mr Herman Moll, and gave him my reaſons for it, although he hath rather choſen to follow other authors.

I ſaw no inhabitants in the place where I landed; and being unarmed, I was afraid of venturing far into the country. I found ſome ſhell-

fiſh

fiſh on the ſhore, and eat them raw, not daring to kindle a fire, for fear of being diſcovered by the natives. I continued three days feeding on oyſters and limpets, to ſave my own proviſions; and I fortunately found a brook of excellent water, which gave me great relief.

On the fourth day, venturing out early a little too far, I ſaw twenty or thirty natives, upon a height not above five hundred yards from me. They were ſtark naked, men, women, and children, round a fire, as I could diſcover by the ſmoke. One of them ſpied me, and gave notice to the reſt; five of them advanced towards me, leaving the women and children at the fire. I made what haſte I could to the ſhore, and getting into my canoe, ſhoved off: The ſavages obſerving my retreat, ran after me; and, before I could get far enough into the ſea, diſcharged an arrow which wounded me deeply on the inſide of my left knee, (I ſhall carry the mark to my grave). I apprehended the arrow might be poiſoned, and paddling out of the reach of their darts, (being a calm day), I made a ſhift to ſuck the wound, and dreſs it as well as I could.

I was at a loſs what to do, for I durſt not return to the ſame landing-place, but ſtood to the North, and was forced to paddle; for the wind, though very gentle, was againſt me, blowing North-Weſt. As I was looking about for a ſecure landing-place, I ſaw a ſail to the North North-Eaſt, which appearing every minute more viſible, I was in ſome doubt whether I ſhould wait

wait for them or no: But at laſt my deteſtation of the *Yahoo* race prevailed; and turning my canoe, I ſailed and paddled together to the South, and got into the ſame creek from whence I ſet out in the morning, chuſing rather to truſt myſelf among theſe Barbarians, than live with European *Yahoos*. I drew up my canoe as cloſe as I could to the ſhore, and hid myſelf behind a ſtone by the little brook, which, as I have already ſaid, was excellent water.

The ſhip came within half a league of this creek, and ſent out her long-boat, with veſſels to take in freſh water (for the place it ſeems was very well known); but I did not obſerve it till the boat was almoſt on ſhore, and it was too late to ſeek another hiding-place. The ſeamen, at their landing, obſerved my canoe, and rummaging it all over, eaſily conjectured that the owner could not be far off. Four of them, well armed, ſearched every cranny and lurking-hole, till at laſt they found me flat on my face behind the ſtone. They gazed a-while, in admiration at my ſtrange uncouth dreſs; my coat made of ſkins, my wooden ſoaled ſhoes, and my furred ſtockings; from whence however they concluded I was not a native of the place, who all go naked. One of the ſeamen, in Portugueze, bid me riſe, and aſked who I was? I underſtood that language very well, and getting upon my feet, ſaid, I was a poor *Yahoo* baniſhed from the Houyhnhnms, and deſired they would pleaſe to let me depart. They admired to hear me anſwer them in their own

tongue, and ſaw by my complexion, I muſt be an European, but were at a loſs to know what I meant by *Yahoos*, and Houyhnhnms, and at the ſame time fell a-laughing at my ſtrange tone in ſpeaking, which reſembled the neighing of a horſe. I trembled all the while betwixt fear and hatred: I again deſired leave to depart, and was gently moving to my canoe; but they laid hold on me, deſiring to know, what country I was of? whence I came? with many other queſtions. I told them I was born in England, from whence I came about five years ago, and then their country and ours were at peace. I therefore hoped they would not treat me as an enemy, ſince I meant them no harm, but was a poor *Yahoo*, ſeeking ſome deſolate place where to paſs the remainder of his unfortunate life.

When they began to talk, I thought I never heard or ſaw any thing ſo unnatural; for it appeared to me as monſtrous, as if a dog or a cow ſhould ſpeak in England, or a *Yahoo* in Houyhnhnm-land. The honeſt Portugueze were equally amazed at my ſtrange dreſs, and the odd manner of delivering my words, which however they underſtood very well. They ſpoke to me with great humanity, and ſaid they were ſure the captain would carry me *gratis* to Liſbon, from whence I might return to my own country: That two of the ſeamen would go back to the ſhip, inform the captain of what they had ſeen, and receive his orders; in the mean time, unleſs I would give my ſolemn oath not to fly, they

would ſecure me by force. I thought it beſt to comply with their propoſal. They were very curious to know my ſtory, but I gave them very little ſatisfaction: And they all conjectured, that my misfortunes had impaired my reaſon. In two hours the boat, which went loaden with veſſels of water, returned with the captain's command to fetch me on board. I fell on my knees, to preſerve my liberty; but all was in vain, and the men having tied me with cords, heaved me into the boat, from whence I was taken into the ſhip, and from thence into the captain's cabbin.

His name was Pedro de Mendez; he was a very courteous and generous perſon: He entreated me to give ſome account of myſelf, and deſired to know what I would eat or drink; ſaid, I ſhould be uſed as well as himſelf, and ſpoke ſo many obliging things, that I wondered to find ſuch civilities from a *Yahoo*. However, I remained ſilent and ſullen; I was ready to faint at the very ſmell of him and his men. At laſt I deſired ſomething to eat out of my own canoe; but he ordered me a chicken, and ſome excellent wine, and then directed that I ſhould be put to bed in a very clean cabbin. I would not undreſs myſelf, but lay on the bed-cloaths, and in half an hour ſtole out when I thought the crew was at dinner, and getting to the ſide of the ſhip, was going to leap into the ſea, and ſwim for my life, rather than continue among *Yahoos*. But one of the ſeamen prevented me, and having informed the captain, I was chained to my cabbin.

After

After dinner, Don Pedro came to me, and deſired to know my reaſon for ſo deſperate an attempt; aſſured me, he only meant to do me all the ſervice he was able, and ſpoke ſo very movingly, that at laſt I deſcended to treat him like an animal, which had ſome little portion of reaſon. I gave him a very ſhort relation of my voyage; of the conſpiracy againſt me by my own men; of the country where they ſet me on ſhore, and of my five years reſidence there. All which he looked upon, as if it were a dream or a viſion; whereat I took great offence; for I had quite forgot the faculty of lying, ſo peculiar to *Yahoos* in all countries where they preſide, and conſequently the diſpoſition of ſuſpecting truth in others of their own ſpecies. I aſked him, whether it were the cuſtom in his country, to *ſay the thing which was not?* I aſſured him, I had almoſt forgotten what he meant by falſhood, and, if I had lived a thouſand years in Houyhnhnm-land, I ſhould never have heard a lie from the meaneſt ſervant: That I was altogether indifferent whether he believed me or no; but however, in return for his favours, I would give ſo much allowance to the corruption of his nature, as to anſwer any objection he would pleaſe to make, and then he might eaſily diſcover the truth.

The captain, a wiſe man, after many endeavours to catch me tripping in ſome part of my ſtory, at laſt began to have a better opinion of my veracity. But he added, that ſince I profeſſed ſo inviolable an attachment to truth, I muſt give

him my word and honour to bear him company in this voyage, without attempting any thing againſt my life, or elſe he would continue me a priſoner till we arrived at Liſbon. I gave him the promiſe he required; but at the ſame time proteſted, that I would ſuffer the greateſt hardſhips, rather than return to live among *Yahoos*.

Our voyage paſſed without any conſiderable accident. In gratitude to the captain, I ſometimes ſat with him at his earneſt requeſt, and ſtrove to conceal my antipathy againſt human-kind, although it often broke out, which he ſuffered to paſs without obſervation. But the greateſt part of the day I confined myſelf to my cabbin, to avoid ſeeing any of the crew. The captain had often entreated me to ſtrip myſelf of my ſavage dreſs, and offered to lend me the beſt ſuit of cloaths he had. This I would not be prevailed on to accept, abhorring to cover myſelf with any thing that had been on the back of a *Yahoo*. I only deſired he would lend me two clean ſhirts, which, having been waſhed ſince he wore them, I believed would not ſo much defile me. Theſe I changed every ſecond day, and waſhed them myſelf.

We arrived at Liſbon, Nov. 5. 1715. At our landing, the captain forced me to cover myſelf with his cloak, to prevent the rabble from crouding about me. I was conveyed to his own houſe; and at my earneſt requeſt, he led me up to the higheſt room backwards. I conjured him to conceal from all perſons what I had told him of

the

the Houyhnhnms; becauſe the leaſt hint of ſuch a ſtory would not only draw numbers of people to ſee me, but probably put me in danger of being impriſoned, or burnt by the *Inquiſition*. The captain perſuaded me to accept a ſuit of cloaths newly made; but I would not ſuffer the tailor to take my meaſure; however, Don Pedro being almoſt of my ſize, they fitted me well enough. He accoutred me with other neceſſaries, all new, which I aired for twenty-four hours, before I would uſe them.

The captain had no wife, nor above three ſervants, none of which were ſuffered to attend at meals; and his whole deportment was ſo obliging, added to every good *human* underſtanding, that I really began to tolerate his company. He gained ſo far upon me, that I ventured to look out of the back window. By degrees I was brought into another room, from whence I peeped into the ſtreet, but drew my head back in a fright. In a week's time he ſeduced me down to the door. I found my terror gradually leſſened, but my hatred and contempt ſeemed to increaſe. I was at laſt bold enough to walk the ſtreet in his company, but kept my noſe well ſtopped with rue, or ſometimes with tobacco.

In ten days Don Pedro, to whom I had given ſome account of my domeſtic affairs, put it upon me as a matter of honour and conſcience, that I ought to return to my native country, and live at home with my wife and children. He told me, there was an Engliſh ſhip in the port juſt ready

to ſail, and he would furniſh me with all things neceſſary. It would be tedious to repeat his arguments, and my contradictions. He ſaid it was altogether impoſſible to find ſuch a ſolitary iſland as I had deſired to live in; but I might command in my own houſe, and paſs my time in a manner as recluſe as I pleaſed.

I complied at laſt, finding I could not do better. I left Liſbon the 24th day of November, in an Engliſh merchantman; but who was the maſter, I never enquired. Don Pedro accompanied me to the ſhip, and lent me twenty pounds. He took kind leave of me, and embraced me at parting, which I bore as well as I could. During this laſt voyage, I had no commerce with the maſter, or any of his men; but pretending I was ſick, kept cloſe in my cabbin. On the 5th of December 1715, we caſt anchor in the Downs about nine in the morning, and at three in the afternoon I got ſafe to my houſe at Rotherhith.

My wife and family received me with great ſurpriſe and joy, becauſe they concluded me certainly dead; but I muſt freely confeſs the ſight of them filled me only with hatred, diſguſt, and contempt; and the more by reflecting on the near alliance I had to them. For although, ſince my unfortunate exile from the Houyhnhnm country, I had compelled myſelf to tolerate the ſight of *Yahoos*, and to converſe with Don Pedro de Mendez; yet my memory and imagination were perpetually filled with the virtues and ideas of thoſe exalted Houyhnhnms. And when I be-

gan

gan to conſider, that by copulating with one of the *Yahoo*-ſpecies I had become a parent of more, it ſtruck me with the utmoſt ſhame, confuſion, and horror.

As ſoon as I entered the houſe, my wife took me in her arms, and kiſſed me: At which, having not been uſed to the touch of that odious animal for ſo many years, I fell into a ſwoon for almoſt an hour. At the time I am writing, it is five years * ſince my laſt return to England: During the firſt year, I could not endure my wife or children in my preſence; the very ſmell of them was intolerable, much leſs could I ſuffer them to eat in the ſame room. To this hour they dare not preſume to touch my bread, or drink out of the ſame cup; neither was I ever able to let one of them take me by the hand. The firſt money I laid out, was to buy two young ſtone-horſes, which I keep in a good ſtable; and next to them the groom is my greateſt favourite, for I feel my ſpirits revived by the ſmell he contracts in the ſtable. My horſes underſtand me tolerably well; I converſe with them at leaſt four hours every day. They are ſtrangers to bridle or ſaddle; they live in great amity with me, and friendſhip to each other.

CHAP.

* This was intended as a mark, whereby the exact point of time, when Dr Swift finiſhed this noble and grand performance, which, in the prophetic ſtyle of his friend Pope, will in future ages be the admiration of all men, ſhould be known to poſterity. *Swift.*

CHAP. XII *.

The author's veracity. His deſign in publiſhing this work. His cenſure of thoſe travellers who ſwerve from the truth. The author clears himſelf from any ſiniſter ends in writing. An objection anſwered. The method of planting colonies. His native country commended. The right of the crown to thoſe countries deſcribed by the author, is juſtified. The difficulty of conquering them. The author takes his laſt leave of the reader; propoſeth his manner of living for the future; gives good advice, and concludeth.

THUS, gentle reader, I have given thee a faithful hiſtory of my travels for ſixteen years and above ſeven months; wherein I have not been ſo ſtudious of ornament, as of truth. I could perhaps, like others, have aſtoniſhed thee with

* I muſt confeſs, in the ſpirit of candour and ſincerity, that I heartily wiſh this 12th chapter, which is, without exception, the dulleſt piece (at leaſt that I can remember) in his whole writings, were either burnt or annihilated: This indeed, like the reſt of his critics, I could eaſily have paſſed over uncenſured: Perhaps they never obſerved it. And yet all that I mean by this gentle ſeverity, (for I deſpiſe the reputation of a little cenſuring critic), is to ſhew the world, that I would ſcorn to approve, through thick and thin, the works of the moſt improved, conſummate genius, in deſpite to that little knowledge which I have endeavoured to acquire, as a direction to my own taſte and judgment. Swift.

with ſtrange improbable tales: But I rather chuſe to relate plain matter of fact, in the ſimpleſt manner and ſtile; becauſe my principal deſign was to inform, and not to amuſe thee.

It is eaſy for us who travel into remote countries, which are ſeldom viſited by Engliſhmen or other Europeans, to form deſcriptions of wonderful animals both at ſea and land. Whereas a traveller's chief aim ſhould be to make men wiſer and better, and to improve their minds by the bad, as well as good example, of what they deliver concerning foreign places.

I could heartily wiſh a law was enacted, that every traveller, before he were permitted to publiſh his voyages, ſhould be obliged to make oath before the Lord High Chancellor, that all he intended to print was abſolutely true, to the beſt of his knowledge; for then the world would no longer be deceived, as it uſually is; while ſome writers, to make their works paſs the better upon the public, impoſe the groſſeſt falſities on the unwary reader. I have peruſed ſeveral books of travels with great delight in my younger days; but having ſince gone over moſt parts of the globe, and been able to contradict many fabulous accounts from my own obſervation, it hath given me a great diſguſt againſt this part of reading, and ſome indignation to ſee the credulity of mankind ſo impudently abuſed. Therefore, ſince my acquaintance were pleaſed to think my poor endeavours might not be unacceptable to my country, I impoſed on myſelf, as a maxim never to be

ſwerved

ſwerved from, that I would *ſtrictly adhere to truth*: Neither indeed can I be ever under the leaſt temptation to vary from it, while I retain in my mind the lectures and example of my noble maſter, and the other illuſtrious Houyhnhnms, of whom I had ſo long the honour to be an humble hearer.

——*Nec ſi miſerum fortuna Sinonem*
Finxit, vanum etiam, mendacemque improba finget.

I know very well, how little reputation is to be got by writings, which require neither genius nor learning, nor indeed any other talent, except a good memory, or an exact *journal*. I know likewiſe, that writers of travels, like *dictionary*-makers, are ſunk into oblivion by the weight and bulk of thoſe who come laſt, and therefore lie uppermoſt. And it is highly probable, that ſuch travellers, who ſhall hereafter viſit the countries deſcribed in this work of mine, may, by detecting my errors (if there be any) and adding many new diſcoveries of their own, juſtle me out of vogue, and ſtand in my place, making the world forget that ever I was an author. This indeed would be too great a mortification, if I wrote for fame: But as my ſole intention was the *public good*, I cannot be altogether diſappointed. For who can read of the virtues I have mentioned in the glorious Houyhnhnms, without being aſhamed of his own vices, when he conſiders himſelf as the reaſoning, governing animal of his country? I ſhall ſay nothing of thoſe remote nations, where *Yahoos* preſide; amongſt which the leaſt corrupted

ed are the Brobdingnagians, whoſe wiſe maxims in morality and government it would be our happineſs to obſerve. But I forbear deſcanting farther, and rather leave the judicious reader to his own remarks and applications.

I am not a little pleaſed, that this work of mine can poſſibly meet with no cenſurers: For what objections can be made againſt a writer, who relates only plain facts, that happened in ſuch diſtant countries, where we have not the leaſt intereſt with reſpect either to trade or negotiations? I have carefully avoided every fault, with which common writers of travels are often too juſtly charged. Beſides, I meddle not the leaſt with any *party*, but write without paſſion, prejudice, or ill-will, againſt any man, or number of men whatſoever. I write for the nobleſt end, to inform and inſtruct mankind, over whom I may, without breach of modeſty, pretend to ſome ſuperiority, from the advantages I received by converſing ſo long among the moſt accompliſhed Houyhnhnms. I write without any view towards profit or praiſe. I never ſuffer a word to paſs, that may look like reflection, or poſſibly give the leaſt offence, even to thoſe who are moſt ready to take it. So that, I hope, I may with juſtice pronounce myſelf an author perfectly blameleſs; againſt whom the tribes of anſwerers, conſiderers, obſervers, reflecters, detecters, remarkers, will never be able to find matter for exerciſing their talents.

I confeſs it was whiſpered to me, that bound in duty, as a ſubject of England, tc given in a memorial to a Secretary of State firſt coming over; becauſe, whatever lanc diſcovered by a ſubject, belong to the c But I doubt whether our conqueſts, in the tries I treat of, would be as eaſy as thoſe o dinando Cortez over the naked Americans. Lilliputians, I think, are hardly worth the c of a fleet and army to reduce them; and ſtion whether it might be prudent or ſafe tempt the Brobdingnagians; or whether an liſh army would be much at their eaſe wit flying iſland over their heads. The Houyhn indeed appear not to be ſo well prepared fo a ſcience to which they are perfect ſtrangers eſpecially againſt miſſive weapons. Ho ſuppoſing myſelf to be a miniſter of ſtate, I never give my advice for invading them. prudence, unanimity, unacquaintedneſs with and their love of their country, would ſupply all defects in the military art. In twenty thouſand of them breaking into the of an European army, confounding the overturning the carriages, battering the fa faces into mummy by terrible yerks from hinder hoofs; for they would well deſerv character given to Auguſtus: *Recalcitrat u tutus.* But inſtead of propoſals for conq that magnanimous nation, I rather wish were in a capacity, or diſpoſition, to ſend a cient number of their inhabitants for civ

Europe, by teaching us the firſt principles of honour, juſtice, truth, temperance, public ſpirit, fortitude, chaſtity, friendſhip, benevolence, and fidelity: The *names* of all which virtues are ſtill retained among us in moſt languages, and are to be met with in modern, as well as ancient authors; which I am able to aſſert from my own ſmall reading.

But I had another reaſon, which made me leſs forward to enlarge his Majeſty's dominions by my diſcoveries. To ſay the truth, I had conceived a few ſcruples with relation to the diſtributive juſtice of princes upon thoſe occaſions. For inſtance, a crew of pirates are driven by a ſtorm, they know not whither; at length, a boy diſcovers land from the top-maſt; they go on ſhore to rob and plunder; they ſee an harmleſs people, are entertained with kindneſs; they give the country a new name; they take formal poſſeſſion of it for their king; they ſet up a rotten plank or a ſtone for a memorial; they murder two or three dozen of the natives, bring away a couple more by force for a ſample, return home, and get their pardon. Here commences a new dominion, acquired with a title by *divine right*. Ships are ſent with the firſt opportunity; the natives driven out or deſtroyed; their princes tortured to diſcover their gold; a free licence given to all acts of inhumanity and luſt, the earth reeking with the blood of its inhabitants; and this execrable crew of butchers employed in ſo pious an expedi-

tion, is a *modern colony*, ſent to convert and civilize an idolatrous and barbarous people.

But this deſcription, I confeſs, doth by no means affect the Britiſh nation, who may be an example to the whole world for their wiſdom, care, and juſtice in planting colonies; their liberal endowments for the advancement of religion and learning; their choice of devout and able paſtors to propagate *Chriſtianity*; their caution in ſtocking their provinces with people of ſober lives and converſations from this the mother kingdom; their ſtrict regard to the diſtribution of juſtice in ſupplying the civil adminiſtration, through all their colonies, with officers of the greateſt abilities, utter ſtrangers to corruption; and, to crown all, by ſending the moſt vigilant and virtuous governors, who have no other view than the happineſs of the people over whom they preſide, and the honour of the King their maſter.

But as theſe countries, which I have deſcribed, do not appear to have any deſire of being conquered, and enſlaved, murdered or driven out by colonies; nor abound either in gold, ſilver, ſugar, or tobacco; I did humbly conceive, they were by no means proper objects of our zeal, our valour, or our intereſt. However, if thoſe whom it more concerns think fit to be of another opinion, I am ready to depoſe, when I ſhall be lawfully called, that no European did ever viſit theſe countries before me. I mean, if the inhabitants ought to be believed, unleſs a diſpute may ariſe concerning the two *Yahoos* ſaid to have been

ſeen many ages ago upon a mountain in Houyhnhnm-land.

But as to the formality of taking poſſeſſion in my ſovereign's name, it never came once into my thoughts; and if it had, yet, as my affairs then ſtood, I ſhould perhaps, in point of prudence and ſelf-preſervation, have put it off to a better opportunity.

Having thus anſwered the only objection that can ever be raiſed againſt me as a traveller, I here take a final leave of all my courteous readers, and return to enjoy my own ſpeculations in my little garden at Rotherhith; to apply thoſe excellent leſſons of virtue, which I learned among the Houyhnhnms; to inſtruct the *Yahoos* of my own family, as far as I ſhall find them docible animals; to behold my figure often in a glaſs, and thus, if poſſible, habituate myſelf by time to tolerate the ſight of a human creature; to lament the brutality of Houyhnhnms in my own country, but always treat their perſons with reſpect, for the ſake of my noble maſter, his family, his friends, and the whole Houyhnhnm race, whom theſe of ours have the honour to reſemble in all their lineaments, however their intellectuals came to degenerate.

I began laſt week to permit my wife to ſit at dinner with me at the fartheſt end of a long table; and to anſwer (but with the utmoſt brevity) the few queſtions I aſked her. Yet the ſmell of a *Yahoo* continuing very offenſive, I always kept my noſe well ſtopt with rue, lavender, or tobacco-

leaves. And, although it be hard for a man late in life to remove old habits, I am not altogether out of hopes, in ſome time, to ſuffer a neighbour *Yahoo* in my company, without the apprehenſions I am yet under of his teeth or his claws.

My reconcilement to the *Yahoo* kind in general might not be ſo difficult, if they would be content with thoſe vices and follies only, which nature hath entitled them to. I am not in the leaſt provoked at the ſight of a lawyer, a pick-pocket, a colonel, a fool, a lord, a gameſter, a politician, a whore-monger, a phyſician, an evidence, a ſuborner, an attorney, a traitor, or the like: This is all according to the due courſe of things. But when I behold a lump of deformity and diſeaſes, both in body and mind, ſmitten with *pride*, it immediately breaks all the meaſures of my patience; neither ſhall I ever be able to comprehend how ſuch an animal, and ſuch a vice, could tally together. The wiſe and virtuous Houyhnhnms, who abound in all excellencies that can adorn a rational creature, have no name for this vice in their language, which hath not terms to expreſs any thing that is evil, except thoſe whereby they deſcribe the deteſtable qualities of their *Yahoos*, among which they were not able to diſtinguiſh this of pride, for want of thoroughly underſtanding human nature, as it ſheweth itſelf in other countries where that animal preſides. But I, who had more experience, could plainly obſerve ſome rudiments of it among the wild *Yahoos*.

But the Houyhnhnms, who live under the government of reaſon, are no more proud of the good qualities they poſſeſs, than I ſhould be for not wanting a leg or an arm, which no man in his wits would boaſt of, although he muſt be miſerable without them. I dwell the longer upon this ſubject, from the deſire I have to make the ſociety of an Engliſh *Yahoo* by any means not inſupportable; and therefore I here entreat thoſe who have any tincture of this abſurd vice, that they will not preſume to come in my ſight.

*** To mortify pride, which indeed was not made for man, and produces not only the moſt ridiculous follies, but the moſt extenſive calamity, appears to have been one general view of the author in every part of theſe Travels. Perſonal ſtrength and beauty, the wiſdom and the virtue of mankind, become objects, not of pride, but of humility, in the diminutive ſtature, and contemptible weakneſs of the Lilliputians; in the horrid deformity of the Brobdingnagians; in the learned folly of the Laputians; and in the parallel drawn between our manners and thoſe of the Houyhnhnms. *Hawkeſ.*

Swift's Gulliver is a direct, plain, and bitter ſatire againſt the innumerable follies and corruptions in law, politics, learning, morals, and religion. And, without diſpute, theſe manifold corruptions have, in a courſe of ages, by the refinements and gloſſes of iniquitous men, arrived at laſt to ſuch ſtrength and effrontery, as to render it impoſſible for all the wit and genius that ever warmed the imagination of a ſatiriſt, to laſh them with any degree of ſeverity proportioned to that exceſs of perturbation and miſchief which they ſeverally occaſion in the great circle of ſociety. All, therefore, which can be done by a wiſe man, (ſeeing that by nature he is appointed to act for the ſpace of thirty, fifty, or ſeventy years, ſome ridiculous, ſilly part in this fantaſtic theatre of miſery, vice, and corruption), is either to lament with Heraclitus, the iniquities of the world; or,

which is the more chearful, and therefore, I do preſume, the more eligible courſe, to laugh, with Democritus, at all the knaves and fools upon earth. And accordingly we find, that Dr Swift has, in theſe Travels, exerted a force of ridicule and ſatire, pointed ſo directly againſt the depravities of human-kind, and ſupported with ſuch an abundance of wit and pleaſantry, as indeed more than perſuade us to believe, that his intention was either to laugh vice and immorality, if it were poſſible, quite out of the world; or at leaſt to avenge the cauſe of virtue on all the patrons and abettors of iniquity. *Swift.*

T H E

THREE FOLLOWING POEMS

Were written (as we are informed) by

DR ARBUTHNOTT, MR POPE, and MR GAY.

TO

VINBUS FLESTRIN,

THE

MAN-MOUNTAIN.

A LILLIPUTIAN ODE.

IN Amaze
Loſt, I gaze.
Can our eyes
Reach thy ſize?
May my lays
Swell with praiſe,
Worthy thee!
Worthy me!
Muſe, inſpire
All thy Fire!
Bards of old
Of him told,
When they ſaid,
Atlas' head
Propt the ſkies:
See! and believe your eyes!

II.

See him ſtride
Valleys wide:
Over woods,
Over floods.
When he treads,
Mountains heads
Groan and ſhake:
Armies quake,
Left his ſpurn
Overturn
Man and ſteed:
Troops take heed!
Left and right,
Speed your flight!
Left an hoſt
Beneath his foot be loſt.

III.

Turn'd aſide
From his hide,
Safe from wound
Darts rebound.
From his noſe
Clouds he blows:
When he ſpeaks,
Thunder breaks!
When he eats,
Famine threats!
When he drinks,
Neptune ſhrinks!
Nigh thy Ear,
In mid-air,
On thy hand,
Let me ſtand;
So ſhall I
Lofty poet! touch the ſky.

THE LAMENTATION OF *Glumdalclitch*, for the Loſs of *Grildrig*: A PASTORAL.

SOON as *Glumdalclitch* miſs'd her pleaſing care,
She wept, ſhe blubber'd, and ſhe tore her hair.
No *Britiſh* miſs ſincerer grief has known,
Her ſquirrel miſſing, or her ſparrow flown.
She *furl'd* her ſampler, and *hawl'd* in her thread,
And ſtuck her needle into *Grildrig*'s bed;
Then ſpread her hands, and with a bounce let fall
Her baby, like the giant in *Guildhall*.
In peals of thunder now ſhe roars, and now
She gently whimpers like a lowing cow:
Yet lovely in her ſorrow ſtill appears,
Her locks diſhevell'd, and her flood of tears,
Seem like the lofty barn of ſome rich ſwain,
When from the thatch drips faſt a ſhow'r of rain.
In vain ſhe ſearch'd each cranny of the houſe,
Each gaping chink impervious to a mouſe.

'Was it for this (ſhe cry'd) with daily care,
'Within thy reach I ſet the vinegar?
'And fill'd the cruet with the acid tide,
'While pepper-water worms thy bait ſupply'd;
'Where twin'd the ſilver eel around thy hook,
'And all the little monſters of the brook.
'Sure in that lake he dropt: My *Grilly's* drown'd,
'She *dragg'd* the cruet, but no *Grildrig* found.
'Vain is thy courage, *Grilly*, vain thy boaſt:
'But little creatures enterprize the moſt.
'Trembling, I've ſeen thee dare the kitten's paw,
'Nay, mix with children, as they play'd at taw,
'Nor fear the marbles, as they bounding flew:
'Marbles to them, but rolling rocks to you.
'Why did I truſt thee with that giddy youth?
'Who from a *page* can ever learn the truth?
'Vers'd in court-tricks, that money-loving boy,
'To ſome lord's daughter ſold the living toy;
'Or rent him limb from limb in cruel play,
'As children tears the wings of flies away.
'From place to place o'er *Brobdingnag* I'll roam,
'And never will return, or bring thee home.
'But who hath eyes to trace the paſſing wind?
'How, then, thy fairy footſteps can I find?
'Doſt thou bewilder'd wander all alone,
'In the green thicket of a moſſy ſtone,
'Or tumbled from the toad-ſtool's ſlipp'ry round,
'Perhaps all maim'd, lie grov'ling on the ground?
'Doſt thou, imboſom'd in the lovely roſe,
'Or ſunk within the peach's down repoſe?
'Within the king-cup if thy limbs are ſpread,
'Or in the golden cowſlip's velvet head,

'O ſhew me, *Flora*, 'midſt thoſe ſweets, the flow'r
'Where ſleeps my *Grildrig* in his fragrant bow'r.
'But ah! I fear thy little fancy roves
'On little females, and on little loves;
'Thy pigmy children, and thy tiny ſpouſe,
'The baby play-things that adorn thy houſe.
'Doors, windows, chimneys, and the ſpacious rooms,
'Equal in ſize to cells of honeycombs.
'Haſt thou for theſe now ventur'd from the ſhore,
'Thy bark a bean-ſhell, and a ſtraw thine oar?
'Or, in thy box, now bounding on the main,
'Shall I ne'er bear thyſelf and houſe again?
'And ſhall I ſet thee on my hand no more,
'To ſee thee leap the lines, and traverſe o'er
'My ſpacious palm? of ſtature ſcarce a ſpan,
'Mimic the actions of a real man?'
'No more behold thee turn my watch's key,
'As ſeamen at a capſtern anchors weigh?
'How wert thou wont to walk with cautious tread,
'A diſh of tea like milk-pail on thy head?
'How chace the mite that bore thy cheeſe away,
'And kept the rolling maggot at a bay?'
She ſaid; but broken accents ſtopt her voice,
Soft as the ſpeaking-trumpet's mellow noiſe:
She ſobb'd a ſtorm, and wip'd her flowing eyes,
Which ſeem'd like two broad ſuns in miſty ſkies:
O! ſquander not thy grief; thoſe tears command
To weep upon our cod in *Newfoundland*:
The plenteous pickle ſhall preſerve the fiſh,
And *Europe* taſte thy ſorrows in her diſh.

MARY GULLIVER

TO

Capt. LEMUEL GULLIVER.

ARGUMENT.

The captain, ſome time after his return, being retired to Mr Sympſon's *in the country; Mrs* Gulliver *apprehending, from his late behaviour, ſome eſtrangement of his affections, writes him the following expoſtulating, ſoothing, and tenderly-complaining* EPISTLE.

WElcome, thrice welcome, to thy native place!
——What! touch me not? What! ſhun a wife's embrace?
Have I for this thy tedious abſence borne,
And wak'd, and wiſh'd whole nights for thy return?
In five long years I took no ſecond ſpouſe,
What *Redriff* wife ſo long hath kept her vows?
Your eyes, your noſe, inconſtancy betray;
Your noſe you ſtop, your eyes you turn away.

'Tis

'Tis ſaid, that thou ſhouldſt *cleave unto thy wife;*
Once *thou* didſt cleave, and *I* could cleave for life.
Hear, and relent! hark, how thy children moan;
Be kind at leaſt to theſe, they are thy own;
Be bold, and count them all; ſecure to find
The honeſt number that you left behind.
See how they pat thee with their pretty paws:
Why ſtart thee, are they ſnakes? or have they claws?
Thy Chriſtian ſeed, our mutual fleſh and bone:
Be kind at leaſt to theſe, they are thy own.
Biddel *, like thee, might fartheſt *India* rove;
He chang'd his country, but retain'd his love.
There's captain *Pannel*, abſent half his life,
Comes back, and is the kinder to his wife.
Yet *Pannel's* wife is brown compar'd to me,
And miſtreſs *Biddel* ſure is fifty-three.
Not touch me! never neighbour call'd me ſlut;
Was *Flimnap's* dame more ſweet in *Lilliput?*
I've no red hair to breathe an odious fume;
At leaſt thy conſort's cleaner than thy *groom.*
Why then that dirty ſtable-boy thy care?
What mean thoſe viſits from the *Sorrel Mare?*
Say, by what witchcraft, or what Dæmon led,
Prefer'ſt thou *litter* to the marriage bed?
Some ſay, the dev'l himſelf is in that *mare:*
If ſo, our *Dean* ſhall drive him forth by prayer.
Some think you mad, ſome think you are poſſeſt,
That *bedlam* and clean ſtraw would ſuit you beſt:
Vain means, alas, this frenzy to appeaze!
That *ſtraw* that *ſtraw* would heighten the diſeaſe.

* Names of ſea captains mentioned in *Gulliver's* Travels.

My bed (the ſcene of all our former joys,
Witneſs two lovely girls, two lovely boys)
Alone I preſs; in dreams I call my dear,
I ſtretch my hand, no *Gulliver* is there!
I wake, I riſe, and ſhiv'ring with the froſt,
Search all the houſe, my *Gulliver* is loſt!
Forth in the ſtreet I ruſh with frantic cries;
The windows open; all the neighbours riſe;
Where ſleeps my Gulliver? *O tell me where!*
The neighbours anſwer, '*With the Sorrel Mare.*'

At early morn I to the market haſte,
(Studious in ev'ry thing to pleaſe thy taſte);
A curious *fowl* and *ſparragraſs* I choſe,
(For I remember you were fond of thoſe),
Three ſhillings coſt the firſt, the laſt ſev'n groats:
Sullen you turn from both, and call for *oats*.

Others bring goods and treaſure to their houſes,
Something to deck their pretty babes and ſpouſes;
My *only* token was a cup like horn,
That's made of nothing but a lady's *corn*.
'Tis not for that I grieve; no, 'tis to ſee
The *groom* and *ſorrel mare* prefer'd to me.

Theſe for ſome moments when you deign to quit,
And (at due diſtance) ſweet diſcourſe admit,
'Tis all my pleaſure thy paſt toil to know,
For pleas'd remembrance builds delight on woe:
At ev'ry danger pants thy conſort's breaſt,
And gaping infants ſquall to hear the reſt.
How did I tremble, when by thouſands bound,
I ſaw thee ſtretch'd on *Lilliputian* ground;

When

When ſcaling armies climb'd up ev'ry part;
Each ſtep they trod, I felt upon my heart.
But when thy torrent quench'd the dreadful blaze,
King, queen, and nation, ſtaring with amaze,
Full in my view how all my huſband came,
And what extinguiſh'd theirs, encreas'd my flame.
Thoſe *ſpectacles*, ordain'd thine eyes to ſave,
Were once my preſent; *love* that armour gave.
How did I mourn at *Bolgolam's* decree!
For when he ſign'd thy death, he ſentenc'd me.
When folks might ſee thee all the country round
For ſixpence, I'd have given a thouſand pound.
Lord! when the *giant-babe* that head of thine
Got in his mouth, my heart was up in mine!
When in the *marrow-bone* I ſee thee ramm'd,
Or, on the houſe-top, by the *monkey* cramm'd;
The piteous images renew my pain,
And all thy dangers I weep o'er again.
But on the *maiden's nipple* when you rid,
Pray heav'n 'twas all a wanton maiden did!
Glumdalclitch too!—with thee I mourn her caſe,
Heav'n guard the gentle girl from all diſgrace!
O may the king that one neglect forgive,
And pardon her the fault by which I live!
Was there no other way to ſet him free?
My life, alas! I fear prov'd death to thee.
O teach me, dear, new words to ſpeak my flame,
Teach me to wooe thee by thy beſt lov'd name!
Whether the ſtyle of *Grildrig* pleaſe thee moſt,
So call'd on *Brobdingnag's* ſtupendous coaſt,
When on the monarch's ample hand you ſate,
And halloo'd in his ear intrigues of ſtate:

Or *Quinbus Fleſtrin* more endearment brings,
When like a mountain you look down on kings:
If Ducal *Nardac*, *Lilliputian* peer,
Or *Glumglum's* humbler tide ſoothe thine ear;
Nay, would kind *Jove* my organs ſo diſpoſe,
To hymn harmonious *Houyhnhnms* thro' the noſe,
I'd call thee *Houyhnhnm*, that high ſounding name,
Thy children's noſes all ſhould twang the ſame.
So might I find my loving ſpouſe of courſe,
Endu'd with all the *virtues of a horſe*.

END OF VOL. V.

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT

This book is under no circumstances to be taken from the Building

form 410